, PARAMETER REDUCTION IN DEFINITION BY

MULTI-SUCCESSOR RECURSION

bу

J. C. Burville

This thesis is submitted for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy of the University of Leicester

1973

_

UMI Number: U391950

All rights reserved

INFORMATION TO ALL USERS

The quality of this reproduction is dependent upon the quality of the copy submitted.

In the unlikely event that the author did not send a complete manuscript and there are missing pages, these will be noted. Also, if material had to be removed, a note will indicate the deletion.



UMI U391950

Published by ProQuest LLC 2015. Copyright in the Dissertation held by the Author.

Microform Edition © ProQuest LLC.

All rights reserved. This work is protected against

All rights reserved. This work is protected against unauthorized copying under Title 17, United States Code.



ProQuest LLC 789 East Eisenhower Parkway P.O. Box 1346 Ann Arbor, MI 48106-1346

THESIS 437572 24 5 73

ABSTRACT

It is well known that in primitive recursive arithmetic with a single successor the number of parameters in a definition by recursion may be successively reduced. In this thesis I examine the possibility of effecting a similar reduction in the number of parameters in a definition by recursion in a multi-successor arithmetic.

The reduction process involves the discovery in multi-successor arithmetic of analogues of pairing functions and of functions which select the elements of an ordered pair. One of the difficulties in finding such functions is the construction within multi-successor arithmetic of suitable product and square foot functions and establishing the properties of these functions, and the pairing functions, within a formalisation of multi-successor arithmetic. The reduction process involves of course an examination of what functions, if any, need to be adjoined to the initial functions to secure the generality of the reduction.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

May I express my gratitude for the assistance and encouragement given by my supervisor, Professor R. L. Goodstein.

Further I would like to thank the Science Research Council for providing financial assistance from October 1968 to October 1971.

CONTENTS

		page
ACKNOWLEDGEMEN!	TS	
CHAPTER I	INTRODUCTION	1
CHAPTER II	REDUCTION OF PARAMETERS IN THE DEFINITION BY PRIMITIVE RECURSION	27
CHAPTER III	FORMAL DEVELOPMENT OF COMMUTATIVE MULTIPLE SUCCESSOR ARITHMETIC	58
CHAPTER IV	INITIAL FUNCTIONS REQUIRED FOR THE REDUCED DEFINITIONS BY PRIMITIVE RECURSIONS	125
BIBLIOGRAPHY		151

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

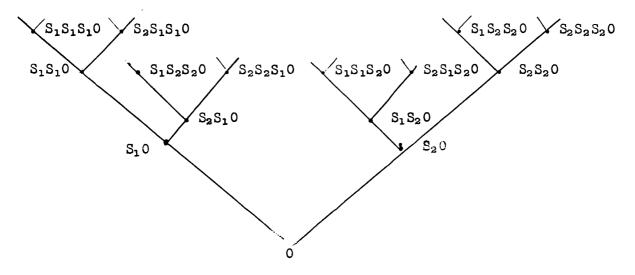
The subject of multiple successor arithmetic was first introduced in a paper by Vladeta Vučković in Mathematica Scandinavica in 1959 [5]. In single successor arithmetic every numeral has only one immediate successor. However in the paper mentioned above Vučković considered the possibility that every numeral has 'n' immediate successors. The successor of x in single successor arithmetic is written Sx, and for the successors in multiple successor arithmetic we shall write S_uX where u will range from 1 to n. In Vučković's paper the suffixes ranged from 0 to n-1, though in this thesis we have found it more convenient for the suffixes to range from 1 to n. Rather than make an analysis of single successor arithmetic, we shall suppose that the reader has a working knowledge of this theory. For references see [1], [2] and [3].

Both single and multiple successor arithmetics are based on the theory of Recursive Functions, that is functions defined by a schema, which defines the function at a starting value and then at the successor of X in terms of the value of that function at X. In the arithmetics that are considered in this thesis the starting value will be O. By substitution the function is then defined successively for all values of X.

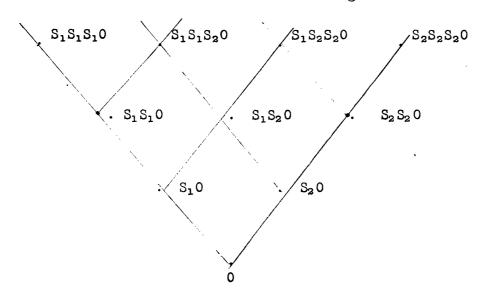
From hereon in this thesis lower case letters will be used for variables and function symbols in single successor arithmetic, and higher case letters for variables and function symbols in multiple successor arithmetic. It is worth noting that we are in fact considering an infinite though countable set of arithmetics, that is for all values of $n \ge 1$. The theory that we shall consider is the commutative theory.

The numerals of single successor arithmetic are as follows: 0, S0, SS0, SSS0, SSSS0, SSSSS0,..... and clearly these form a complete ordering. The condition that $x \ge y$ is given by the condition y - x = 0. This is a total ordering since for all x and y either x - y = 0 or y - x = 0, and if both are equal to zero then x = y. Now in multiple successor arithmetic the numerals are as follows:

0, S_10 , S_20 ,... S_n0 , S_1S_10 , S_1S_20 , S_nS_n0 , $S_1S_1S_10$,.... $S_nS_nS_n0$,..... These numerals have a partial ordering which can be illustrated in '2' successor arithmetic with the aid of a lattice diagram.



In commutative successor arithmetic the diagram becomes:



The theory of single successor arithmetic is built up from three initial functions, namely the Identity, Zero and Successor functions given by

$$I_i^k(x_1,x_2,...,x_k)$$
 written x_i
 $Z(x)$ written 0
 $S(x)$ written Sx .

However in multiple successor arithmetic we obviously require the Identity and Zero functions though, in order to obtain 'n' successors for X we require 'n' successor functions amongst the initial functions. The initial set of functions is therefore as follows:

$$I_{\mathbf{t}}^{k}(X_{\mathbf{k}}, X_{\mathbf{k}}, \dots, X_{\mathbf{k}})$$
 written $X_{\mathbf{t}}$
$$Z(X)$$
 written 0
$$S_{\mathbf{u}}(X)$$
 written $S_{\mathbf{u}}X$ for $\mathbf{u}=1,\dots,n$.

In order to define further functions in single successor arithmetic use is made of a defining schema called 'Definition by Primitive Recursion':-

f(x,y) is said to be defined by primitive recursion from g(y),h(x,y,z) if

$$f(0,y) = g(y)$$

$$f(Sx,y) = h(x,y,f(x,y))$$

where g(..) and h(...) are initial functions or previously defined functions. Primitive recursive functions can also be defined by substitution from functions which have been previously defined by primitive recursion.

The above schema obviously defines f(x,y) for all values of the variable x. That is, the function is defined at a starting value, namely 0. Then from the second equation subsequent values of the function can be found by substituting x = 0, S0, SS0, SSS0, SSS0,..... in turn. In other words in multiple successor arithmetic with 'n'

successors, the basic defining schema for a primitive recursive function would need to define the function at a starting value, namely 0, and then have n further equations to evaluate the function for each different successor of X. Hence this schema will consist of 'n+1' equations as follows:-

A function F(X,Y) is defined by primitive recursion in multiple successor arithmetic by

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

 $F(S_{1}X,Y) = B_{11}(X,Y,F(X,Y))$ $u = 1,...,n$

where the functions A(..) and $B_{u}(....)$ are initial functions or have been previously defined. A primitive recursive function can be defined by substitution as in single successor arithmetic.

In this thesis the successors of our arithmetic are commutative. Clearly this condition is not implicit in the equations for the definition of primitive recursion. It is therefore necessary to impose a restriction on the functions $B_u(\ldots)$ $u=1,\ldots,n$ in order that the commutativity of the successors is maintained. We require that $F(S_uS_vX,Y) = F(S_vS_uX,Y)$ for all u,v. Since

$$F(S_uS_vX,Y) = B_u(S_vX,Y,F(S_vX,Y))$$

$$= B_u(S_vX,Y,B_v(X,Y,F(X,Y)))$$
and
$$F(S_vS_uX,Y) = B_v(S_uX,Y,F(S_uX,Y))$$

$$= B_v(S_uX,Y,B_u(X,Y,F(X,Y)))$$

the condition is therefore that

$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Y,Z)) \quad \text{for all } \mathbf{u},\mathbf{v}.$$

For an illustration of this consider in '2' successor arithmetic the function defined by

$$F(0,\Upsilon) = \Upsilon$$

$$F(S_1X,\Upsilon) = F(X,\Upsilon)$$

$$F(S_2X,\Upsilon) = S_2F(X,\Upsilon)$$

F(X,Y) is a primitive recursive function in commutative multiple successor arithmetic; since

$$B_{1}(S_{2}X,Y,B_{2}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{1}(S_{2}X,Y,S_{2}Z)$$

$$= S_{2}Z$$
and
$$B_{2}(S_{1}X,Y,B_{1}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{2}(S_{1}X,Y,Z)$$

$$= S_{2}Z$$

$$= B_{1}(S_{2}X,Y,B_{2}(X,Y,Z))$$

the commutativity condition is satisfied.

Now consider the function defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_1X,Y) = S_1F(X,Y)$$

$$F(S_2X,Y) = 0$$

F(X,Y) is not a primitive recursive function in commutative recursive successor arithmetic since

$$B_{1}(S_{2}X,Y,B_{2}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{1}(S_{2}X,Y,0)$$

$$= S_{1}0$$

$$B_{2}(S_{1}X,Y,B_{1}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{2}(S_{1}X,Y,S_{1}Z)$$

$$= 0$$

$$\neq S_{1}0$$

the commutativity condition is not satisfied.

The uniqueness rule of inference for a primitive recursive function in single successor arithmetic is given by

$$f(0) = g(0)$$

$$f(Sx) = h(x,f(x))$$

$$g(Sx) = h(x,g(x))$$

$$f(x) = g(x)$$

That is if two functions have the same defining equations in the definition by primitive recursion, then these two functions are identical, maintaining the uniqueness of definition by primitive recursion. Clearly in 'n' successor arithmetic we require the uniqueness rule of inference to be as follows:

$$F(0) = G(0)$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = B_{u}(X,F(X)) \qquad u = 1,...,n$$

$$G(S_{u}X) = B_{u}(X,G(X)) \qquad u = 1,...,n$$

$$F(X) = G(X)$$

Parameters have been omitted from the above statements though these are implicit in the rules.

Let M_n be the set of numerals in 'n' successor arithmetic, then $M_1 = 0$, S0, SS0, SSS0, SSS0,.....

Hence for any primitive recursive function the domain of the arguments cover all numerals that can be generated by repeated application of the successor functions to the zero function. That is letting D(X) represent the domain of X, for a function F(X) we have

 $D(F(X)) = M_n \quad \text{in 'n' successor arithmetic,}$ and letting R(X) represent the range of X, for a function F(X) we have

 $R(F(X)) \subseteq M_n$ in 'n' successor arithmetic.

For an example of this consider the identity function I(X), in this instance.

$$D(I(X)) = M_n$$

$$R(I(X)) = M_n$$

and for the function 2.X (supposing a function such that F(X) = X + X exists in our arithmetic)

$$D(2.X) = M_n$$

$$R(2,X) \subset M_{\acute{H}}$$
 ('C' meaning 'is a proper subset of')

and in single successor arithmetic we would have

$$\mathbb{R}(2.\mathbb{X}) = 0$$
, SSO, SSSSO, SSSSSSO,

Also consider the functions S_uX u=1,...,n. For this we have

$$D(S_nX) = M_n$$

$$R(S_{u}^{X}) \subset M_{n}$$
 since there is no X such that $S_{u}^{X} = 0$.

Equality in M_0 is defined by means of an axiom due to Professor R. L. Goodstein, which is designed to avoid irregular models, given by

$$S_a S_b S_c \dots S_q O = S_a S_b S_c \dots S_q O$$

with $a \leqslant b \leqslant c \leqslant \ldots \leqslant q$ and $a' \leqslant b' \leqslant c' \leqslant \ldots \leqslant q'$ if and only if

$$a = a'$$
, $b = b'$, $c = c'$, ..., $q = q'$.

However it has been shown by M. T. Partis in [4] that this axiom can be replaced by the condition $S_10 \neq S_20$.

We shall introduce several basic primitive recursive functions in 'n' successor arithmetic, and consider the properties of these functions.

First we shall define the function $Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} X$, $\mathbf{v} = 0, \dots, n-1$ (the case $\mathbf{v} = \mathbf{n}$ will be considered as the case $\mathbf{v} = \mathbf{0}$), as defined in Vučković's original paper.

The defining schema is

$$Y \sigma_v^0 = Y$$

 $Y \sigma_v^0 X = S_{u+v}(Y \sigma_v^0 X)$ $u = 1,...,n$.

,

The suffix u+v is maintained within the range [1,n] by taking the excess over 'n'. The commutativity condition for this function is given by

$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{w}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{w}}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{w}}X,Y,S_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}Z)$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}Z$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}Z$$

$$= B_{\mathbf{w}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y,S_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}Z)$$

$$= B_{\mathbf{w}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Y,Z)).$$

In order to prove the properties of this function we require the uniqueness rule

$$F(0) = G(0)$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = B_{u}(X,F(X)) \qquad u = 1,...,n$$

$$G(S_{u}X) = B_{u}(X,G(X)) \qquad u = 1,...,n$$

$$F(X) = G(X)$$

A complete formal development of the arithmetic will be left to a later chapter; here we shall just prove simply certain properties of several linear functions in the arithmetic.

First we consider Vucković's function $Y \sigma_v X v = 0,...,n-1$.

LEMMA
$$(S_uY) \sigma_vX = S_u(Y \sigma_vX) \quad u=1,...,n$$

<u>Proof</u> Denoting the right-hand side of the equation by R(X) and the left-hand side by L(X) we have that

$$L(0) = (S_{u}Y) \sigma_{v}0$$

$$= S_{u}Y \qquad Defn$$

$$R(0) = S_{u}(Y \sigma_{v}0)$$

$$= S_{u}Y \qquad Defn$$

$$\begin{split} \mathbf{L}(\mathbf{S_{\mathbf{w}}X}) &= (\mathbf{S_{\mathbf{u}}Y}) \ \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbf{S_{\mathbf{w}}X} \\ &= \ \mathbf{S_{\mathbf{w+v}}}(\mathbf{S_{\mathbf{u}}Y}) \ \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbf{X} \\ &= \ \mathbf{S_{\mathbf{w+v}}L(\mathbf{X})} \\ \mathbf{R}(\mathbf{S_{\mathbf{w}}X}) &= \ \mathbf{S_{\mathbf{u}}(Y} \ \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbf{S_{\mathbf{w}}X}) \\ &= \ \mathbf{S_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w+v}}(Y} \ \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbf{X}) \\ &= \ \mathbf{S_{\mathbf{u}+v}S_{\mathbf{u}}(Y} \ \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbf{X}) & \text{Defn} \\ &= \ \mathbf{S_{\mathbf{w+v}}S_{\mathbf{u}}(Y} \ \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbf{X}) & \text{Condition of commutativity} \\ &= \ \mathbf{S_{\mathbf{w+v}}S_{\mathbf{u}}(X)} \ . \end{split}$$

Hence by the Uniqueness rule

$$L(X) = R(X)$$

End of proof.

In general
$$X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}(Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Z) \neq (X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Y) \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Z$$
.

A simple counter-example serves to illustrate this; consider

Then
$$X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}(Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Z) = X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}(S_1 0 \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_2 0)$$

$$= X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_{2+\mathbf{v}}(S_1 0 \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} 0) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_{2+\mathbf{v}} S_1 0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{2+\mathbf{v}+\mathbf{v}}(X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_1 0) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{2+\mathbf{v}+\mathbf{v}}(X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_1 0) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{2+\mathbf{v}+\mathbf{v}} S_{1+\mathbf{v}}(X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} 0) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{2+\mathbf{v}+\mathbf{v}} S_{1+\mathbf{v}} X \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$(X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Y) \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Z = (X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{1}} 0) \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{2}} 0$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{2} + \mathbf{v}} ((X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{1}} 0) \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} 0)$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{2} + \mathbf{v}} (X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{1}} 0)$$

$$Defn$$

$$= S_{2+V}S_{1+V}(X \sigma_{V}0)$$
 Defn
$$= S_{2+V}S_{1+V}X$$
 Defn

and $S_{2+v+v}S_{1+v}X$ is equal to $S_{2+v}S_{1+v}X$ only when v=0.

Also we find that in general

$$X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Y \neq Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} X$$
,

In order to prove this consider the particular instance where Y = 0:

$$X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} 0 \neq 0 \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} X$$
.

If $X = S_2 0$ then

$$X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{0} = S_{2} \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{0}$$

$$= S_{2}(\sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{0}) \qquad \text{Previous Lemma}$$

$$= S_{2} \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{0} \qquad \text{Defn}$$

and

$$0 \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{X}} = 0 \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{S}_{2}} 0$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{z}+\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{V}} (0 \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{V}} 0) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{z}+\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{V}} 0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

and S_{2+v}^{0} is only equal to S_2^{0} when v = 0

Now we consider if this function is distributive over itself, that is if

$$X \sigma_{\mathbf{y}}(Y \sigma_{\mathbf{y}} Z) = (X \sigma_{\mathbf{y}} Y) \sigma_{\mathbf{y}}(X \sigma_{\mathbf{y}} Z)$$
 $(x \neq 0)$

This condition is never true; put $Y = S_10$, $Z = S_20$

$$\begin{array}{lll} \textbf{X} \ \sigma_{\textbf{v}}(\textbf{Y} \ \sigma_{\textbf{u}}\textbf{Z}) &= \textbf{X} \ \sigma_{\textbf{v}}(\textbf{S}_{\textbf{1}}\textbf{0} \ \sigma_{\textbf{u}}\textbf{S}_{\textbf{2}}\textbf{0}) \\ &= \textbf{X} \ \sigma_{\textbf{v}}\textbf{S}_{\textbf{1}}\textbf{S}_{\textbf{2}+\textbf{u}}\textbf{0} & \textbf{Defn} \\ &= \textbf{S}_{\textbf{1}+\textbf{v}}\textbf{S}_{\textbf{2}+\textbf{u}+\textbf{v}}\textbf{X} & \textbf{Defn} \\ &(\textbf{X} \ \sigma_{\textbf{v}}\textbf{Y}) \ \sigma_{\textbf{u}}(\textbf{X} \ \sigma_{\textbf{v}}\textbf{Z}) &= (\textbf{X} \ \sigma_{\textbf{v}}\textbf{S}_{\textbf{1}}\textbf{0}) \ \sigma_{\hat{\textbf{W}}}(\textbf{X} \ \sigma_{\textbf{v}}\textbf{S}_{\textbf{2}}\textbf{0}) \\ &= (\textbf{S}_{\textbf{1}+\textbf{v}}\textbf{X}) \ \sigma_{\textbf{u}}(\textbf{S}_{\textbf{2}+\textbf{v}}\textbf{X}) & \textbf{Defn} \\ &= \textbf{S}_{\textbf{1}+\textbf{v}}\textbf{S}_{\textbf{2}+\textbf{v}+\textbf{u}}(\textbf{X} \ \sigma_{\textbf{u}}\textbf{X}) & \textbf{Defn} \end{array}$$

and $X \neq X \sigma_{ij} X$ for any value of $u (x \neq 0)$.

Therefore we have proved that Vucković's function Y $\sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{X}}$ is neither associative, nor commutative, except possibly in the case $\mathbf{v}=0$; this particular case is that of addition, that is the function Y+X defined by the usual schema

$$Y + 0 = Y$$

 $Y + S_u X = S_u (Y + X)$ $u = 1,...,n$

PROPOSITION $Y \sigma_0 X = Y + X$

Proof
$$L(0) = Y \sigma_0^0$$

$$= Y$$

$$R(0) = Y + 0$$
Defin

=
$$S_u(Y \sigma_0 X)$$
 Normal arithmetical rules of addition
= $S_uL(X)$ u = 1,...,n

$$R(S_{u}X) = Y + S_{u}X$$

$$= S_{u}(Y + X)$$

$$= S_{u}R(X)$$

$$u = 1,...,n$$
Defin

Hence by the uniqueness rule of inference

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
 as required.

It will be shown that addition is commutative and associative by a series of Lemmas.

LEMMA
$$O + X = X$$

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
 as required.

LEMMA
$$S_u Y + X = S_u (Y + X)$$

$$L(S_{v}X) = S_{u}Y + S_{v}X$$

$$= S_{v}(S_{u}Y + X)$$

$$= S_{v}L(X)$$
Defin

$$R(S_{\mathbf{v}}X) = S_{\mathbf{u}}(Y + S_{\mathbf{v}}X)$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{v}}(Y + X)$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{u}}(Y + X)$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}}R(X)$$
Defin

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
 as required

PROPOSITION

$$Y + X = X + Y$$

Commutativity

Proof

$$L(0) = Y + 0$$

= Y

Defn

$$R(0) = 0 + Y$$

= Y

Previous Lemma

$$L(S_u^X) = Y + S_u^X$$

 $= S_{u}(Y + X)$

Defn

$$= S_uL(X)$$

$$R(S_u^X) = S_u^X + Y$$

 $= S_{\mathbf{u}}(Y + X)$

Previous Lemma

$$= S_u^R(X)$$

Hence by the uniqueness rule of inference

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
 as required.

PROPOSITION

$$(X + Y) + Z = X + (Y + Z)$$
 Associativity

Proof

$$L(0) = (0 + Y) + Z$$

$$= Y + Z$$

Previous Lemma

$$R(0) = 0 + (Y + Z)$$

$$= Y + Z$$

Previous Lemma

$$L(S_u^X) = (S_u^X + Y) + Z$$

$$= S_u(X + Y) + Z$$

Previous Lemma

$$= S_{u}((X + Y) + Z)$$
 Previous Lemma

$$= S_uL(X)$$

$$R(S_{u}X) = S_{u}X + (Y + Z)$$

$$=S_{u}(X + (Y + Z))$$

$$= S_{u}R(X)$$
Previous Lemma

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
.

Having considered addition functions in our arithmetic, we shall now proceed to consider difference functions.

The basic functions for the addition functions are the successor functions. For the difference functions the basic functions are the predecessor functions $P_{\mathbf{v}}X$ $\mathbf{v}=1,\ldots,n$, defined by the schema

$$P_{\mathbf{v}}^{0} = 0$$

$$P_{\mathbf{v}}^{S} \mathbf{u}^{X} = \{X, \quad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \}$$

$$\{S_{\mathbf{u}}^{P} \mathbf{v}^{X}, \quad \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \}$$

the commutativity condition is

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}} X & \mathbf{w} = \mathbf{v} \\ S_{\mathbf{w}} B_{\mathbf{u}} (X, Y, Z) & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= B_{\mathbf{w}} (S_{\mathbf{u}} X, Y, B_{\mathbf{u}} (X, Y, Z)) \text{ as required}$$

We are now able to introduce the difference function Y - X, defined by the schema.

$$Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} 0 = Y$$

 $Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}X = P_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} X)$ $u = 1,...,n$

In order to prove the commutativity condition for this function we first need to prove the following Lemma:

 $P_{u}P_{u}X = P_{u}P_{u}X$ **IEMMA** $L(0) = P_{u}P_{v}0$ Proof $= P_{n}^{0}$ Defn = 0 Defn $R(0) = P_{\mathbf{v}}P_{\mathbf{u}}0$ $= P_{yy}0$ Defn = 0 Defn $L(S_{\mathbf{w}}X) = P_{\mathbf{u}}P_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}X$ $= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{u}} X & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{w}} P_{\mathbf{v}} X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$ Defn Defn $= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{u}} X & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}} X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{w}} P_{\mathbf{u}} P_{\mathbf{v}} X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$ Defn Defn $= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{u}}X & \mathbf{v}=\mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}X & \mathbf{v}\neq\mathbf{w} & \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{w}}L(\mathbf{X}) & \mathbf{v}\neq\mathbf{w} & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{w} \end{cases}$

$$\begin{split} \mathbb{R}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{w}} \mathbb{X}) &= \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{w}} \mathbb{X} \\ &= \begin{cases} \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} & \text{Defn} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{w}} \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ \mathbb{P}_{\mathbf{v}} \mathbb{X} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{w} \end{pmatrix}$$

Now letting

$$B_{\mathbf{w}}(X,Y,Z) = \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{u}}X & w=\mathbf{v} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}X & w=\mathbf{u} \\ S_{\mathbf{w}}Z & w\neq\mathbf{v} & \& w\neq\mathbf{u} \end{cases}$$

then

$$L(S_{\mathbf{W}}X) = B_{\mathbf{W}}(X,Y,L(X))$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{w}}X) = B_{\mathbf{w}}(X,Y,R(X))$$
.

Hence by the uniqueness rule of inference

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
 as required

The commutativity condition for Y - X follows by

$$\begin{split} \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z})) &= \mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z}) \\ &= \mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{Z} \\ &= \mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{Z} \qquad \text{Previous } \mathbf{I} \mathbf{E} \mathbf{m} \mathbf{m} \mathbf{a} \\ &= \mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z}) \\ &= \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z})) \quad \text{as required} \end{split}$$

$$Y \tau_v^0 = Y$$

 $Y \tau_v^S X = P_{v+v}(Y \tau_v^X)$ $v=0,...,n-1$,

again taking the excess over n for u+v. The case of v=n is considered as v=0.

For the commutativity condition we have

$$\begin{split} \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{w}}\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{w}}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z})) &= \mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z}) \\ &= \mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{Z} \\ &= \mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{Z} \qquad \text{Previous Lemma} \\ &= \mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z}) \\ &= \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{w}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z})) \quad \text{as required} \end{split}$$

As for Vucković's functions $\sigma_{\rm v}$, the particular case v=0 being addition, so for $\tau_{\rm v}$, with v=0 we have the normal difference function Y - X.

PROPOSITION $Y \tau_0 X = Y - X$

 $\underline{\text{Proof}} \qquad \qquad \underline{\text{L}(0)} = \underline{\text{Y}} \tau_0 0$

= Y Defn

R(0) = Y • 0 = Y Defn

 $L(S_{u}X) = Y \tau_{o} S_{u}X$ $= P_{u+o}(Y \tau_{o}X)$ $= P_{u}L(X)$ Defin

$$R(S_{u}X) = Y - S_{u}X$$

$$= P_{u}(Y - X)$$

$$= P_{u}R(X)$$
Defin

$$L(X) = R(X)$$

The common properties of the addition function and the difference function in single successor arithmetic are

$$y - x = Sy - Sx$$

$$(y + x) - x = y$$

$$x + (y - x) = y + (x - y)$$

For the first two of these we shall prove in multiple successor arithmetic, that is

$$Y \stackrel{\bullet}{-} X = S_{\mathbf{v}}Y \stackrel{\bullet}{-} S_{\mathbf{v}}X$$
 $\mathbf{v} = 1, ..., n$
 $(Y + X_{\mathbf{v}}) \stackrel{\bullet}{-} X = Y$

The third equation X + (Y - X) = Y + (X - Y), known as the Key Equation, will not be proved in this thesis. The proof in primitive recursive multiple successor arithmetic is due to Professor R.L.Goodstein, and can be found in [9].

PROPOSITION
$$Y - X = S_v Y - S_v X$$

Proof
$$L(0) = Y - 0$$

$$= Y$$

$$R(0) = S_{v}Y - S_{v}0$$
Defin

= Y Defn

$$L(S_{u}X) = Y - S_{u}X$$

$$= P_{u}(Y - X) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= P_{u}L(X)$$

$$R(S_{u}X) = S_{v}Y - S_{v}S_{u}X$$

$$= S_{v}Y - S_{u}S_{v}X \qquad \text{Commutativity of successors}$$

$$= P_{u}(S_{v}Y - S_{v}X) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= P_{u}R(X)$$

$$(L(X) = R(X))$$
 as required

PROPOSITION
$$(Y + X) - X = Y$$

Proof
$$L(0) = (Y + 0) - 0$$

$$= Y + 0$$
Defin

$$L(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = (Y + S_{\mathbf{u}}X) - S_{\mathbf{u}}X$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{u}}(Y + X) - S_{\mathbf{u}}X \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= (Y + X) - X \qquad \text{Previous Proposition}$$

$$= L(X)$$

Defn

$$R(S_{u}X) = Y$$
$$= R(X)$$

R(0) = Y

Hence by the uniqueness rule of inference

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
 as required.

Let us now consider the following three equations, relating $\sigma_{_{\boldsymbol{V}}}$ and $\boldsymbol{\tau}_{_{\boldsymbol{V}}}.$

1.
$$Y \tau_{\mathbf{v}} X = S_{\mathbf{u}} Y \tau_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{u}} X$$

2.
$$(Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} X) \tau_{\mathbf{v}} X = Y$$

3.
$$X \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}(Y \tau_{\mathbf{v}}X) = Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}(X \tau_{\mathbf{v}}Y)$$

It would surely be remarkable if all three equations were true, especially 3., which would be a generalisation of the Key Equation, but unfortunately this equation is not true. Equation 1. needs a slight adjustment, and equation 2. is true. Equation 1. we adjust to

$$Y \tau_{\mathbf{v}} X = S_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}} Y \tau_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{u}} X$$

PROPOSITION
$$Y \tau_v X = S_{u+v} Y \tau_v S_u X$$

Proof
$$L(0) = Y \tau_{V} 0$$
$$= Y$$
 Defn

$$R(0) = S_{u+v} Y \tau_{v} S_{u} 0$$

$$= P_{u+v} (S_{u+v} Y \tau_{v} 0) \qquad Defn$$

$$= P_{u+v} S_{u+v} Y \qquad Defn$$

$$= Y \qquad Defn$$

$$L(S_{\mathbf{w}}X) = Y \tau_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}X$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}(Y \tau_{\mathbf{v}}X) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}L(X)$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{w}}^{\mathbf{X}}) = S_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{Y}} \mathbf{\tau}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}} S_{\mathbf{w}}^{\mathbf{X}}$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{Y}} \mathbf{\tau}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{w}}} S_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{X}} \qquad \text{Commutativity of successors}$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{Y}} (S_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{Y}} \mathbf{\tau}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}} X) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{R}}(X)$$

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
 as required

PROPOSITION (Y
$$\sigma_{\mathbf{v}}X$$
) $\tau_{\mathbf{v}}X = Y$

$$\frac{\text{Proof}}{\text{L(0)}} = (Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{0}) \tau_{\mathbf{v}}^{0}$$
$$= Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}^{0}$$

Defn

Defn

$$R(0) = Y$$

$$L(S_{u}X) = (Y \sigma_{v}S_{u}X) \tau_{v}S_{u}X$$

$$= S_{u+v}(Y \sigma_{v}X) \tau_{v}S_{u}X \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= (Y \sigma_{v}X) \tau_{v}X \qquad \text{Previous Proposition}$$

$$= L(X)$$

$$R(S_{u}X) = Y$$

Hence by the uniqueness rule of inference

$$L(X) = R(X)$$

= R(X)

Further, the equation Z - (Y + X) = (Z - Y) - X is provable in both single and multiple successor arithmetic; using the σ_v and τ_v functions we are able to make the following generalisation of this equation:

$$z \tau_{u}(Y \sigma_{v}X) = (z \tau_{u}Y) \tau_{u+v}X$$

$$z \tau_{u}(Y \sigma_{v}X) = (z \tau_{u}Y) \tau_{u+v}X$$

Proof

$$L(0) = Z \tau_{u}(Y \sigma_{v}0)$$

$$= Z \tau_{u}Y \qquad Defn$$

$$R(0) = (Z \tau_{u}Y) \tau_{u+v}0$$

$$= Z \tau_{u}Y \qquad Defn$$

$$L(S_{w}X) = Z \tau_{u}(Y \sigma_{v}S_{w}X)$$

$$= Z \tau_{u}S_{w+v}(Y \sigma_{v}X) \qquad Defn$$

$$= P_{w+v+u}(Z \tau_{u}(Y \sigma_{v}X)) \qquad Defn$$

$$= P_{w+v+u}(Z \tau_{u}(Y \sigma_{v}X)) \qquad Defn$$

$$= P_{w+v+v}L(X)$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{w}}X) = (Z \tau_{\mathbf{u}}Y) \tau_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{w}}X$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}((Z \tau_{\mathbf{u}}Y) \tau_{\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}X) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{u}+\mathbf{v}}R(X)$$

Hence by the uniqueness rule of inference

$$L(X) = R(X)$$

PROPOSITION

$$Y \sigma_{v}(X \tau_{v}Y) \neq X \sigma_{v}(Y \tau_{v}X)$$

Proof A simple counter-example will serve to illustrate this result.

Put
$$Y = S_10$$
, $X = S_20$, $v = 1$

$$L(X) = S_10 \sigma_1(S_20 \tau_1S_10)$$

$$= S_10 \sigma_1P_2(S_20 \tau_10) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_10 \sigma_1P_2S_20 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_10 \sigma_10 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_10 \sigma_10 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$R(X) = S_{2}0 \sigma_{1}(S_{1}0 \tau_{1}S_{2}0)$$

$$= S_{2}0 \sigma_{1}P_{3}(S_{1}0 \tau_{1}0)$$

$$= S_{2}0 \sigma_{1}P_{3}S_{1}0$$

$$= S_{2}0 \sigma_{1}S_{1}0$$

$$= S_{2}(S_{2}0 \sigma_{1}0)$$

$$= S_{2}S_{2}0$$

$$\neq L(X)$$

The multiplication functions in this arithmetic will be left until a later chapter.

A function particular to multiple successor arithmetic, which we have not yet considered, is the component function. This is a most valuable function which allows us to apply and utilise many of the results and principles of single successor arithmetic. The component function C.X is defined by the schema

$$C_{\mathbf{v}}^{0} = 0$$

$$C_{\mathbf{v}}^{0} = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{v}}^{0} & u \neq v \\ S_{\mathbf{u}}^{0} & u = v \end{cases}$$

the commutativity condition is

$$\begin{array}{lll} B_{u}(S_{w}X,Y,B_{w}(X,Y,Z)) &= & B_{w}(X,Y,Z) & u \neq v \\ & & S_{u}B_{w}(X,Y,Z) & u = v \\ & & = & Z & u \neq v & w \neq v \\ & & S_{w}Z & u \neq w & w = v \\ & & S_{u}Z & u = v & w \neq v \\ & & S_{u}S_{w}Z & u = v & w \neq v \end{array}$$

$$= \begin{cases} Z & \text{w} \neq \text{v} & \text{u} \neq \text{v} \\ S_{\text{u}} Z & \text{w} \neq \text{v} & \text{u} = \text{v} \\ S_{\text{w}} Z & \text{w} = \text{v} & \text{u} \neq \text{v} \\ S_{\text{w}} S_{\text{u}} Z & \text{w} = \text{v} & \text{u} = \text{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\text{u}}(X, Y, Z) & \text{w} \neq \text{v} \\ S_{\text{w}} B_{\text{u}}(X, Y, Z) & \text{w} = \text{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} B_{\text{u}}(X, Y, Z) & \text{w} \neq \text{v} \\ S_{\text{w}} B_{\text{u}}(X, Y, Z) & \text{w} = \text{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= B_{\text{w}}(S_{\text{u}} X, Y, B_{\text{u}}(X, Y, Z)) \text{ as required}$$

Clearly $C_v X$ only allows use of the successors S_v in X, and thus reduces X to one type of successor. The reason the word component is used for this function is due to M.T.Partis in [4], where it is proved that variables in multiple successor arithmetic can be regarded as 'n'tuples with only one successor. The function $C_v X$ reduces X to only the 'v'th component, that is if

$$X = (X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n)$$
 $C_{\mathbf{v}}X = (0, 0, \dots, 0, X_{\mathbf{v}}, 0, \dots, 0)$

Further properties of the component function will be considered in the formal development of the arithmetic in chapter III.

PROBLEMS ATTEMPTED

The problems that have been attempted in this thesis are:

1. Reduction of the number of parameters in definition by primitive recursion.

An 'm+1'ary function $F(X,Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m)$ is said to be defined by primitive recursion from A and B if

$$F(0,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m}) = A(Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m})$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m}) = B_{u}(X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m},F(X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m}))$$

$$u=1,...,n$$

where $A(Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m)$ and $B_{i_1}(X,Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m,Z)$ u=1,...,n are initial functions or previously defined functions, and further, in order to preserve commutativity of the successors

$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m},B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m},Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m},B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m},Z))$$

for all u,v.

The problem is to reduce this definition to the defining schemata.

(i) Define F(X,Y) by the schema, called R_1

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

$$F(S_{11}X,Y) = B_{11}(X,Y,F(X,Y))$$
 u=1,...,n

 $B_{y}(S_{y}X,Y,B_{y}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{y}(S_{y}X,Y,B_{y}(X,Y,Z))$ for all u,v.

Define F(X,Y) by the schema, called R_1* (ii)

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

$$F(S_uX,Y) = B_u(X,F(X,Y))$$
 u=1,...,n

where

$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Z))$$
 for all u,v.

(iii) Define F(X,Y) by the schema, called R_1**

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

$$F(S_{1}X,Y) = B_{1}(Y,F(X,Y))$$
 u=1,...,n

where

$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(Y,B_{\mathbf{v}}(Y,Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(Y,B_{\mathbf{u}}(Y,Z))$$
 for all u,v.

(iv) Define F(X,Y) by the schema called R_1***

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

$$F(S_{ij}X,Y) = B_{ij}(F(X,Y)) \qquad u=1,...,n$$

 $B_{y}(B_{y}(Z)) = B_{y}(B_{y}(Z))$ where

for all u,v.

We consider further what functions, if any, are required to be added to the initial set of functions in order to produce the set of all primitive recursive functions, from each of these definitions.

In single successor arithmetic, the reduction of parameters in the definition of primitive recursion is to be found in [1] and [3].

2. A complete analysis of X.

In single successor arithmetic a numeral x can be compared relatively simply to any other numeral with the aid of the difference function y - x. Using both y - x and x - y a complete comparison is made between x and y. In multiple successor arithmetic, however, x is not so easily analysed. The questions which we seek to answer are the following, in order to obtain a complete analysis of x.

- (i) How many successor symbols in X?
- (ii) How many different successor symbols?
- (iii) What these different successor symbols are.
- (iv) How many of each successor symbol?

With these four questions answered the analysis of X is obviously complete and a comparison between X and Y can be effected.

CHAPTER II

REDUCTION OF PARAMETERS IN THE DEFINITION BY PRIMITIVE RECURSION

In this chapter we will consider the problem of the reduction of parameters in the definition of primitive recursion in Commutative Multiple Successor Arithmetics.

The first task will be to consider the reduction, given that we have already in our arithmetic a set of functions with special properties. Different functions will then be considered for this set. In chapter III the arithmetic will be formalised and a proof of these properties will be given.

In single successor arithmetic the reduction is solved with the aid of three functions L(x), K(x) and J(u,v), such that

$$L(J(u,v)) = u$$

$$K(J(u,v)) = v$$

We shall suppose first of all that in commutative multiple successor arithmetic we have three functions L(X), K(X) & J(U,V) with the above properties. With these functions we are able to reduce the number of parameters in the definition of primitive recursion.

Consider therefore the definition of primitive recursion with 'm' parameters (m finite); this schema we will call R_m :-

A function $F(X,Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m)$ is said to be defined by primitive recursion from A and B if

$$F(0,Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m) = A(Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m)$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m}) = B_{u}(X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m},F(X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m})) \quad u = 1,...,n$$

where
$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X, Y_1, Y_2, ..., Y_m, B_{\mathbf{v}}(X, Y_1, Y_2, ..., Y_m)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X, Y_1, Y_2, ..., Y_m, B_{\mathbf{u}}(X, Y_1, Y_2, ..., Y_m))$$
all $\mathbf{u}.\mathbf{v}$

and A(...) and $B_u(...)$ u=1,...,n are previously defined functions.

Now let
$$W = J(Y_1, Y_2)$$

and let $G(X, W, Y_3, Y_4, ..., Y_m) = F(X, L(W), K(W), Y_3, Y_4, ..., Y_m)$
 $= F(X, Y_1, Y_2, ..., Y_m)$.
Then $G(X, W, Y_3, Y_4, ..., Y_m)$ is defined by
 $G(0, W, Y_3, Y_4, ..., Y_m) = A(L(W), K(W), Y_3, ..., Y_m)$
 $= A'(W, Y_3, Y_4, ..., Y_m)$
 $G(S_UX, W, Y_3, Y_4, ..., Y_m) = B_U(X, L(W), K(W), Y_3, ..., Y_m, G(X, W, Y_3, ..., Y_m))$
 $u = 1, ..., n$
 $u = 1, ..., n$

and the commutativity condition reduces to

$$\begin{split} \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{X}, \mathbf{L}(\mathbf{W}), \mathbf{K}(\mathbf{W}), \mathbf{Y}_{3}, \dots, \mathbf{Y}_{m}, \ \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{X}, \mathbf{L}(\mathbf{W}), \mathbf{K}(\mathbf{W}), \mathbf{Y}_{3}, \dots, \mathbf{Y}_{m})) = \\ \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{X}, \mathbf{L}(\mathbf{W}), \mathbf{K}(\mathbf{W}), \mathbf{Y}_{3}, \dots, \mathbf{Y}_{m}, \ \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{X}, \mathbf{L}(\mathbf{W}), \mathbf{K}(\mathbf{W}), \mathbf{Y}_{3}, \dots, \mathbf{Y}_{m}, \mathbf{Z})) \end{split}$$
 all \mathbf{u}, \mathbf{v}

and therefore

$$B'_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,W,Y_{3},...,Y_{m},B'_{\mathbf{v}}(X,W,Y_{3},...,Y_{m},Z)) = B'_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,W,Y_{3},...,Y_{m},B'_{\mathbf{u}}(X,W,Y_{3},...,Y_{m},Z))$$
all u,v.

Hence the definition by primitive recursion is now reduced to a schema R_{m-1} containing m-1 parameters, that is, $F(X,Y_1,Y_2,\ldots,Y_{m-1})$ is defined by

$$F(0,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m-1}) = A(Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m-1})$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m-1}) = B_{u}(X,Y_{1},...,Y_{m-1},F(X,Y_{1},...,Y_{m-1})) \quad u = 1,...,n$$
where

 $B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y_{1},...,Y_{m-1},B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Y_{1},...,Y_{m-1},Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y_{1},...,Y_{m-1},B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Y_{1},...,Y_{m-1},Z)$ all u,v.

By repeated use of this method we can reduce the definition to a definition with only one parameter R_1 , that is, F(X,Y) is defined from A and B by:

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

$$F(S_uX,Y) = B_u(X,Y,F(X,Y)) \qquad u=1,...,n$$
 where
$$B_u(S_vX,Y,B_v(X,Y,Z)) = B_v(S_uX,Y,B_u(X,Y,Z)) \quad \text{all } u,v .$$

The proof just given reduces R_m to R_1 in m-1 steps. A similar technique can be used to complete the proof in a single step. We proceed as follows:

Let
$$W = J(Y_1, J(Y_2, J(Y_3, ..., J(Y_{m-1}, Y_m)))$$
 ...)
Let $K^2(W) = K(K(W))$, and $K^r(W) = \overline{K(K(...,K(W))}$)

We therefore have that

$$L(W) = Y_{1}$$

$$L(K(W)) = Y_{2}$$

$$L(K^{2}(W)) = Y_{3}$$

$$\vdots$$

$$\vdots$$

$$L(K^{m-2}(W)) = Y_{m-1}$$

$$K^{m-1}(W) = Y_{m}$$

$$G(X,W) = F(X,L(W),L(K(W)),...,L(K^{m-2}(W)),K^{m-1}(W)).$$

We therefore define G(X,W) by

and let

$$G(O,W) = A(L(W),L(K(W)),...,L(K^{m-2}(W)),K^{m-1}(W))$$

= A'(W), say.

$$G(S_{u}X,W) = B_{u}(X,L(W),L(K(W)),...,L(K^{m-2}(W)),K^{m-1}(W),$$

$$F(X,L(W),L(K(W)),...L(K^{m-1}(W)),K^{m-1}(W)))$$

$$u = 1,...,n$$

$$= B_{11}^{*}(X,W,G(X,W)), \text{ say } u = 1,...,n$$

and the commutativity condition reduces to

$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}^{X},L(W),L(K(W)),...,L(K^{m-2}(W)),K^{m-1}(W),B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,L(W),L(K(W)),...,L(K^{m-2}(W)),K^{m-1}(W))) =$$

$$B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X, L(W), L(K(W)), \dots, L(K^{m-2}(W)), K^{m-1}(W), B_{\mathbf{u}}(X, L(W), L(K(W)), \dots \\ \dots, L(K^{m-2}(W)), K^{m-1}(W)))$$

$$\therefore B'_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X, W, B'_{\mathbf{v}}(X, W, Z)) = B'_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X, W, B'_{\mathbf{u}}(X, W, Z)) \quad \text{all } \mathbf{u}, \mathbf{v}.$$

Thus R_m is reduced to R_1 .

We now require:

where

(i) to reduce R_1 to R_1^* where F(X,Y) is defined by the schema

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

$$F(S_{11}X,Y) = B_{11}(X,F(X,Y))$$
 u = 1,...,n

where
$$B_{\mu}(S_{\nu}X,B_{\nu}(X,Z)) = B_{\nu}(S_{\mu}X,B_{\mu}(X,Z))$$
 all u,v

(ii) to reduce R_1 to R_1^{**} where F(X,Y) is defined by the schema

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

$$F(S_uX,Y) = B_u(Y,F(X,Y))$$
 $u = 1,...,n$

where
$$B_{ij}(Y,B_{v}(Y,Z)) = B_{v}(Y,B_{ij}(Y,Z))$$
 all u,v .

(iii) to reduce R_1 to R_1^{***} where F(X,Y) is defined by the schema

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = B_{u}(F(X,Y)) \qquad u = 1,...,n$$

$$B_{u}(B_{v}(Z)) = B_{v}(B_{v}(Z)) \qquad \text{all } u,v.$$

Reduction of R₁ to R₁*:

Let
$$G(X,Y) = J(Y,F(X,Y))$$
.

Then G(X,Y) is defined by the schema

$$G(0,Y) = J(Y,A(Y))$$

$$= A'(Y), \text{ say}$$

$$G(S_uX,Y) = J(Y,F(S_uX,Y))$$

$$= J(Y,B_u(X,Y,F(X,Y)))$$

$$= J(L(G(X,Y)),B_u(X,L(G(X,Y)),K(G(X,Y)))$$

$$= B_u(X,G(X,Y)), \text{ say} \qquad u = 1,...,n$$

and for the commutativity condition we let

$$Z' = J(Y.Z)$$
.

which is the required commutativity condition.

Thus
$$F(X,Y) = K(G(X,Y))$$
.

Reduction of R_1 to R_1^{**} :

Let
$$G(X,Y) = J(X,F(X,Y))$$
.

Then G(X,Y) is defined by the schema

$$G(0,Y) = J(0,A(Y))$$

$$= A'(Y), \text{ say}$$

$$G(S_{u}X,Y) = J(S_{u}X,F(S_{u}X,Y)) \quad u = 1,...,n$$

$$= J(S_{u}X,B_{u}(X,Y,F(X,Y)))$$

$$= J(S_{u}L(G(X,Y)),B_{u}(L(G(X,Y)),Y,K(G(X,Y))))$$

$$= B_{u}^{*}(Y,G(X,Y)), \text{ say} \quad u = 1,...,n$$

and for the commutativity condition we let

$$Z' = J(X.Z)$$
.

Thus

which is the required commutativity condition.

Thus F(X,Y) = K(G(X,Y)).

Reduction of R₁ to R₁***:

the reduction of R to R*** can be achieved in three ways, that is

- (1) R_1 to R_1 * then R_1 * to R_1 ***
- (2) R_1 to R_1^{**} then R_1^{**} to R_1^{***}
- (3) R_1 direct to R_1^{***} .

Both the reductions R_1* to R_1*** and R_1** to R_1*** are similar to the reductions R_1 to R_1** and R_1 to R_1* respectively.

We shall consider the reductions R_1* to R_1**** and R_1 to R_1**** . Reduction R_1* to R_1**** :

R₁* is the schema

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

 $F(S_{u}X,Y) = B_{u}(X,F(X,Y))$ $u = 1,...,n$

where $B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Z))$ all u,v.

First let G(X,Y) = J(X,F(X,Y).

Then G(X,Y) is defined by the schema

$$G(0,Y) = J(0,A(Y))$$
$$= A'(Y), say$$

$$G(S_{u}X,Y) = J(S_{u}X,F(S_{u}X,Y))$$

$$= J(S_{u}X,B_{u}(X,F(X,Y))) \qquad u = 1,...,n$$

$$= J(S_{u}L(G(X,Y)),B_{u}(L(G(X,Y)),K(G(X,Y))))$$

$$= B'_{u}(G(X,Y)), \text{ say}, \qquad u = 1,...,n.$$

and for the commutativity condition we let

$$Z' = J(X,Z)$$
.

Then

$$\begin{split} & B_{u}^{!}(B_{v}^{!}(Z^{!})) = B_{u}^{!}(J(S_{v}L(Z^{!}),B_{v}(L(Z^{!}),K(Z^{!})))) \\ & = B_{u}^{!}(J(S_{v}X,B_{v}(X,Z))) \\ & = J(S_{u}L(J(S_{v}X,B_{v}(X,Z))),B_{u}(L(J(S_{v}X,B_{v}(X,Z))),K(J(S_{v}X,B_{v}(X,Z))))) \\ & = J(S_{u}S_{v}X,B_{u}(S_{v}X,B_{v}(X,Z))) \\ & = J(S_{v}S_{u}X,B_{v}(S_{u}X,B_{u}(X,Z))) & (\text{commutativity condition of } R_{1}* \\ & \text{and commutativity of successors}) \\ & = J(S_{v}I(J(S_{u}X,B_{u}(X,Z))),B_{v}(L(J(S_{u}X,B_{u}(X,Z))),K(J(S_{u}X,B_{u}(X,Z))))) \\ & = B_{v}^{!}(J(S_{u}X,B_{u}(X,Z))) \\ & = B_{v}^{!}(J(S_{u}X,B_{u}(X,Z))) \\ & = B_{v}^{!}(J(S_{u}L(Z^{!}),B_{u}(L(Z^{!}),K(Z^{!})))) \\ & = B_{v}^{!}(B_{u}^{!}(Z^{!})) & \text{all } u,v, \end{split}$$

which is the required commutativity condition.

Thus
$$F(X,Y) = K(G(X,Y))$$
.

Reduction of R_1 to R_1*** :

R₁ is the schema

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

 $F(S_uX,Y) = B_u(X,Y,F(X,Y))$ $u = 1,...,n$

where $B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Y,Z))$ all \mathbf{u},\mathbf{v} .

First let
$$G(X,Y) = J(X,J(Y,F(X,Y)))$$
.

Then G(X,Y) is defined by the schema

$$G(0,Y) = J(0,J(Y,F(0,Y)))$$

= $J(0,J(Y,A(Y)))$
= $A'(Y)$, say

$$\begin{split} G(S_{u}X,Y) &= J(S_{u}X,J(F(S_{u}X,Y))) & u = 1,...,n \\ &= J(S_{u}X,J(Y,B_{u}(X,Y,F(X,Y)))) \\ &= J(S_{u}L(G(X,Y)),J(L(K(G(X,Y))),B_{u}(L(G(X,Y)),L(K(G(X,Y))),K(K(G(X,Y))))) \\ &= B_{u}^{t}(G(X,Y)), \text{ say } u = 1,...,n \end{split}$$

and for the commutativity condition we let

$$Z' = J(X,J(Y,Z)).$$

Then

$$B_{u}^{!}(B_{v}^{!}(Z^{!})) = B_{u}^{!}(J(S_{v}L(Z^{!}),J(L(K(Z^{!})),B_{v}(L(Z^{!}),L(K(Z^{!})),K(K(Z^{!})))))$$

$$= B_{u}^{!}(J(S_{v}X,J(Y,B_{v}(X,Y,Z))))$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} \operatorname{Put} & \mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{v}} = \operatorname{J}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{X}}, \operatorname{J}(Y, \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbb{X}, Y, \mathbb{Z}))) & \text{for suffix } \mathbf{v} \text{ or } \mathbf{u} \\ \vdots & \operatorname{L}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{v}}) = \mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{X}}, & \operatorname{L}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{v}})) = \mathbb{Y}, & \operatorname{K}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{v}})) = \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbb{X}, Y, \mathbb{Z}) \\ & = \operatorname{J}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{L}}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{v}}), \operatorname{J}(\mathbb{L}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{v}})), \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{L}}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{v}}), \operatorname{L}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{v}})), \operatorname{K}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{v}})))) \\ & = \operatorname{J}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}} \mathbb{X}, \operatorname{J}(Y, \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{U}}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{X}}, Y, \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{U}}(\mathbb{X}, Y, \mathbb{Z})))) \\ & = \operatorname{J}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{L}}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{u}}), \operatorname{J}(\mathbb{L}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{u}})), \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{L}}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{u}}), \mathbb{L}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{u}})), \mathbb{K}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{W}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{u}})))) \\ & = \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{t}}(\mathbb{J}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{L}}(\mathbb{Z}^{\mathbf{t}}), \operatorname{J}(\mathbb{L}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{Z}^{\mathbf{t}})), \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{L}}(\mathbb{Z}^{\mathbf{t}}), \mathbb{L}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{Z}^{\mathbf{t}})), \mathbb{K}(\mathbb{K}(\mathbb{Z}^{\mathbf{t}}))))) \\ & = \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{t}}(\mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{t}}(\mathbb{Z}^{\mathbf{t}})) & \text{all} \mathbf{u}, \mathbf{v} \end{aligned}$$

which is the required commutativity condition.

Thus
$$F(X,Y) = K(K(G(X,Y)))$$
.

In the previous sections the problem of reduction of parameters in the definition of primitive recursion with 'm' parameters has been successfully achieved with the aid of the set of functions L(X), K(X) & J(U,V). Now we must consider what functions have the required properties

$$L(J(U,V)) = U$$

$$K(J(U,V)) = V .$$

In order to discover these functions, we first examine the functions used in the reduction in single successor arithmetic. To do this we need to define the following.

Defn.
$$y + x$$
 Addition $y + 0 = y$ $y + Sx = S(y + x)$

<u>Defn.</u> **Px** Predecessor P0 = 0

PSx = x

Defn. y - x Difference y - 0 = y y - Sx = P(y - x)

<u>Defn.</u> y.x Multiplication y.0 = 0

 $y \cdot Sx = y \cdot x + y$

<u>Defn.</u> $x.x = x^2$ Notational definition (explicit)

Defn. Rx Square root RO = 0 $RSx = Rx + (S0 - ((SRx)^2 - Sx)))$

Clearly, from the definition, Rx is the integer part of the square root of x, or the square root of the greatest perfect square in x.

Now with the aid of these functions we can define L(x), K(x) & J(u,v) as follows:

$$J(u,v) = (u + v)^{2} + u$$

$$L(X) = x - (Rx)^{2}$$

$$K(x) = Rx - L(x)$$

Obviously, informally,

$$L(J(u,v)) = ((u + v)^{2} + u) - (R((u + v)^{2} + u))^{2}$$

$$= ((u + v)^{2} + u) - (u + v)^{2}$$

$$= u$$

$$K(J(u,v)) = (u + v) - u$$

$$= v \quad \text{as required.}$$

In multiple successor arithmetic however the corresponding functions are not quite so straightforward.

As can be clearly seen the functions L(x), K(x) & J(u,v) are based on the relations

$$R(u^2) = u$$
 and
$$R((u + v)^2 + u) = u + v .$$

In other words, we meek to define a suitable multiplication function with a suitable square root function.

Let us consider the functions we have for multiplication, their properties, and possible square roots.

successors)

1. Vučković's multiplication function defined by

$$Y*0 = 0$$

 $Y*S_u^X = Y*X \sigma_u^Y \qquad u=1,...,n$

The commutativity condition requires the equality of

$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Y,Z)) = (Z \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}Y) \sigma_{\mathbf{u}}Y$$

$$B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Y,Z)) = (Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}}Y) \sigma_{\mathbf{v}}Y.$$

We shall prove these equal by the following lemma.

$$L(X,Y) = R(X,Y)$$

$$: B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Y,Z))$$

The properties of this function include commutativity, associativity, and distribution over σ_u functions for all u; the case of u=0 is addition.

Commutativity is proved by the following lemmas:

LEMMA O*X = O

 $\underline{Proof} \qquad \qquad L(0) = 0*0$

= 0 Defn

R(0) = 0

 $L(S_{u}^{X}) = 0*S_{u}^{X}$

= $0*X \sigma_u^0$ Defin

= 0*X

Defn

by uniqueness

= L(X)

 $R(S_{i}X) = 0$

= R(X)

L(X) = R(X)

LEMMA $(Z \sigma_v Y) \sigma_u X = (Z \sigma_u X) \sigma_v Y$

 $\underline{Proof} \qquad L(0,Y,Z) = (Z \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Y) \sigma_{\mathbf{u}}^{0}$

 $= (Z \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Y)$ Defn

 $R(0,Y,Z) = (Z \sigma_{u}^{0}) \sigma_{v}^{Y}$

 $= Z \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} Y$ Defn

= $S_{u+v}(R(X,Y)) \sigma_v Y$

•••

LEMMA

Proof

∴
$$L(X,Y) = R(X,Y)$$
 by uniqueness

PROPOSITION Y*X = X*Y Commutativity

Proof $L(0,Y) = Y*0$

= 0 Defn

 $R(0,Y) = 0*Y$

= 0 Previous Lemma

 $L(S_uX,Y) = Y*S_uX$

= $Y*X \sigma_uY$ Defn

= $L(X,Y) \sigma_uY$
 $R(S_uX,Y) = S_uX*Y$

= $X*Y \sigma_uY$ Defn

= $R(X,Y) \sigma_uY$

For the distributive property we need the following Lemmas:

IEMMA
$$Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} X) = (Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}} Y) \sigma_{\mathbf{v}+\mathbf{u}} X$$

$$\underline{Proof} \qquad \underline{L}(0,Y,Z) = Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} 0)$$

$$= Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}} Y \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$R(0,Y,Z) = (Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}} Y) \sigma_{\mathbf{v}+\mathbf{u}} 0$$

$$= Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}} Y \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$\underline{L}(S_{\mathbf{w}} X,Y,Z) = Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{w}} X)$$

$$= Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}}(Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} X) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{w}+\mathbf{v}+\mathbf{u}} Z \sigma_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \sigma_{\mathbf{v}} X) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{W+V+U}L(X,Y,Z)$$

$$R(S_{W}X,Y,Z) = (Z \sigma_{U}Y) \sigma_{V+U}S_{W}X$$

$$= S_{W+V+U}(Z \sigma_{U}Y) \sigma_{V+U}X \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{W+V+U}R(X,Y,Z)$$

$$\therefore \qquad L(X,Y,Z) = R(X,Y,Z) \qquad \text{by uniqueness}$$

$$PROPOSITION \qquad Z^*(Y \sigma_{U}X) = Z^*Y \sigma_{U}Z^*X \qquad \text{Distributive}$$

$$Proof \qquad L(0,Y,Z) = Z^*Y \sigma_{U}Z^*$$

$$= Z^*Y \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$R(0,Y,Z) = Z^*Y \sigma_{U}Z^*$$

$$= Z^*Y \sigma_{U}0 \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$L(S_{V}X,Y,Z) = Z^*(Y \sigma_{U}S_{V}X)$$

$$= Z^*S_{V+U}(Y \sigma_{U}X) \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= Z^*(Y \sigma_{U}X) \sigma_{V+U}Z \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= L(X,Y,Z) \sigma_{V+U}Z \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= (Z^*Y \sigma_{U}Z^*S_{V}X \qquad \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= (Z^*Y \sigma_{U}Z^*X) \sigma_{V+U}Z \qquad \qquad \text{Previous Lemma}$$

$$= R(X,Y,Z) \sigma_{V+U}Z$$

$$\therefore \qquad L(X,Y,Z) = R(X,Y,Z) \qquad \qquad \text{by uniqueness}$$

PROPOSITION
$$(Z*Y)*X = Z*(Y*X)$$
 Associative

Proof $L(0,Y,Z) = (Z*Y)*0$

$$= 0 \qquad Defn$$

$$R(0,Y,Z) = Z*(Y*0)$$

$$= Z*0 \qquad Defn$$

$$= 0 \qquad Defn$$

$$L(S_uX,Y,Z) = (Z*Y)*S_uX$$

$$= (Z*Y)*X \sigma_u(Z*Y) \qquad Defn$$

$$= L(X,Y,Z) \sigma_u(Z*Y) \qquad Defn$$

$$= L(X,Y,Z) \sigma_u(Z*Y) \qquad Defn$$

$$= Z*(Y*X \sigma_uY) \qquad Defn$$

$$= R(X,Y,Z) \sigma_u(Z*Y) \qquad Previous Proposition$$

$$= R(X,Y,Z) \sigma_u(Z*Y) \qquad Previous Proposition$$

In general however $Z^*(Y \tau_{11}X) \neq Z^*Y \tau_{12}Z^*X$.

Consider the counter-example

:.

$$u=0, \quad X=S_20, \quad Y=S_10, \quad Z=S_2S_10$$

$$S_2S_10*(S_10\tau_0S_20) = S_2S_10*P_2(S_10\tau_00)$$

$$= S_2S_10*P_2S_10 \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_2S_10*S_10 \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_2S_10*0\sigma_1S_2S_10 \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= 0\sigma_1S_2S_10 \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_3S_20 \qquad \qquad \text{Defn}$$

L(X,Y,Z) = R(X,Y,Z) by uniqueness

$$\begin{split} \mathbf{S_{2}S_{1}0*S_{1}0*S_{2}0} &= (\mathbf{S_{2}S_{1}0*0} \ \sigma_{1} \ \mathbf{S_{2}S_{1}0}) \ \tau_{0} (\mathbf{S_{2}S_{1}0*0} \ \sigma_{2} \ \mathbf{S_{2}S_{1}0}) \quad \text{Defn} \\ &= \mathbf{S_{3}S_{2}0} \ \tau_{0} \ \mathbf{S_{4}S_{3}0} \qquad \qquad \text{Defn} \\ &= \mathbf{P_{4}P_{3}S_{3}S_{2}0} \qquad \qquad \text{Defn} \\ &= \mathbf{S_{2}0} \qquad \qquad \text{Defn} \end{split}$$

Thus in general $Z^*(Y \tau_u^X) \neq Z^*Y \tau_u^{Z*X}$

2. We shall now consider the multiplicative function defined by

$$Y^{X}O = 0$$

$$Y^{X}S_{D}X = Y^{X}X + Y \qquad u = 1,...,n$$

and the commutativity condition

$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Y,Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Y,Z) + Y$$

$$= (Z + Y) + Y$$

$$= B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Y,Z) + Y$$

$$= B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y,B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Y,Z)).$$

Clearly the function does not distinguish between successors, but unfortunately when n > 1 the function is not commutative. We shall prove this by a simple counter-example.

Put
$$Y = S_10$$
, $X = S_20$
 $Y^X X = S_10^X S_20$
 $= S_10^X 0 + S_10$ Defin
 $= 0 + S_10$ Defin

$$= S_2 o^X 0 + S_2 0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= 0 + S_2 0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_2 0 \qquad \text{Previous Lemma}$$

$$PROPOSITION \qquad Z^X(Y+X) = Z^XY + Z^XX \qquad \text{Distributive over addition}$$

$$Proof \qquad L(0,Y,Z) = Z^X(Y+0)$$

$$= Z^XY \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$R(0,Y,Z) = Z^XY + Z^X0$$

$$= Z^XY + 0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= Z^XY \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$L(S_uX,Y,Z) = Z^X(Y+S_uX)$$

$$= Z^XS_u(Y+X) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= Z^X(Y+X) + Z \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= L(X,Y,Z) + Z$$

$$R(S_uX,Y,Z) = Z^XY + Z^XS_uX$$

$$= Z^XY + (Z^XX+Z) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= Z^XY + Z^XX + Z \qquad \text{Associative rule for addition}$$

$$= R(X,Y,Z) + Z$$

$$\therefore \qquad L(X,Y,Z) = R(X,Y,Z) \qquad \text{by uniqueness}$$

$$PROPOSITION \qquad (Z^XY)^XX = Z^X(Y^XX) \qquad \text{Associative}$$

$$Proof \qquad L(0,Y,Z) = (Z^XY)^X0$$

Defn

= 0

 $X^{X}Y = S_{2}O^{X}S_{1}O$

However, although this function is distributive over addition, it is not distributive over the σ_n functions.

:.

That is
$$Z^{X}(Y \sigma_{u} X) \neq Z^{X}Y \sigma_{u} Z^{X}X$$

Put $Z = S_{2}0$, $Y = S_{1}0$, $X = S_{2}0$
 $S_{2}0^{X}(S_{1}0 \sigma_{u}S_{2}0) = S_{2}0^{X}(S_{2}+uS_{1}0 \sigma_{u}0)$ Defin
 $= S_{2}0^{X}S_{2}+uS_{1}0$ Defin
 $= S_{2}0^{X}S_{1}0 + S_{2}0$ Defin
 $= S_{2}0^{X}O + S_{2}O + S_{2}O$ Defin
 $= S_{2}S_{2}O$ Defin
 $= S_{2}S_{2}O$ Defin
 $= S_{2}O^{X}S_{1}O \sigma_{u}S_{2}O^{X}S_{2}O = (S_{2}O^{X}O + S_{2}O) \sigma_{u}(S_{2}O^{X}O + S_{2}O)$ Defin
 $= S_{2}O \sigma_{u}S_{2}O$ Defin
 $= S_{2}O \sigma_{u}S_{2}O$ Defin

and $S_{2+u}S_{2}O$ is only equal to $S_{2}S_{2}O$ when u = 0.

Also we find that in general

$$Z^{X}(Y \tau_{u}^{X}) \neq Z^{X}Y \tau_{u}^{Z^{X}X} .$$
Put $u = 0$, $Z = S_{1}0$, $Y = S_{2}S_{1}0$, $X = S_{1}S_{1}0$

$$S_{1}0^{X} (S_{2}S_{1}0 \tau_{u}^{X}S_{1}S_{1}0) = S_{1}0^{X}P_{1}P_{1}S_{2}S_{1}0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{1}0^{X}S_{2}0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{1}0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{1}0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$S_{1}0^{X}S_{2}S_{1}0 \tau_{u}^{X}S_{1}S_{1}0 = (S_{1}0^{X}S_{1}0 + S_{1}0) \tau_{u}(S_{1}0^{X}S_{1}0 + S_{1}0) \text{ Defn}$$

$$= (S_{1}0^{X}0 + S_{1}0 + S_{1}0) \tau_{u}(S_{1}0^{X}0 + S_{1}0 + S_{1}0) \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= S_{1}S_{1}0 \tau_{u}^{X}S_{1}S_{1}0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= P_{1}P_{1}S_{1}S_{1}0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

$$= 0 \qquad \text{Defn}$$

3. For the last multiplication function we consider the function defined by

$$Y \cdot 0 = 0$$

 $Y \cdot S_u X = Y \cdot X + C_u Y$ $u = 1, ..., n$

and the commutativity condition is

$$\begin{split} \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{U}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{V}}\mathbf{X},&\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{V}}(\mathbf{X},&\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z})) &= \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{V}}(\mathbf{X},&\mathbf{Y},\mathbf{Z}) + \mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{Y} \\ &= (\mathbf{Z} + \mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{V}}\mathbf{Y}) + \mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{Y} \\ &= (\mathbf{Z} + \mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{Y}) + \mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{V}}\mathbf{Y} \qquad \text{Associative rule of addition} \\ &= \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{U}}(\mathbf{X},&\mathbf{Y},&\mathbf{Z}) + \mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{V}}\mathbf{Y} \\ &= \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{U}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{X},&\mathbf{Y},&\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{U}}(\mathbf{X},&\mathbf{Y},&\mathbf{Z})) \end{split} .$$

This function is commutative, proved by the following Lemmas.

LEMMA

$$0.X = 0$$

Proof

$$L(0) = 0.0$$

= 0

Defn

$$R(0) = 0$$

$$L(S_u^X) = 0.S_u^X$$

 $= 0.X + C_u^0$

Defn

$$= 0.X + 0$$

Defn

$$= 0.X$$

Defn

$$= L(X)$$

$$R(S_{u}X) = 0$$

$$= R(X)$$

•••

$$L(X) = R(X)$$

by uniqueness

LEMMA

$$S_u Y \cdot X = Y \cdot X + C_u X$$

Proof

$$L(0,Y) = S_uY.0$$

= 0

Defn

$$R(0,Y) = Y.0 + C_u^0$$

$$= 0 + 0$$

Defn

Defn

$$L(S_v^X,Y) = S_u^Y.S_v^X$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{u}} Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{u}} Y$$

Defn

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}} Y \cdot X + S_{\mathbf{v}} C_{\mathbf{v}} Y & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ S_{\mathbf{u}} Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}} Y & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

Defn

Defn

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{v}.\mathbf{x} + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \\ L(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(L(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ L(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(L(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ L(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} Y.\mathbf{x} + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y} + C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{x} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ Y.\mathbf{x} + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y} + S_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{x} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}((\mathbf{y}.\mathbf{x} + C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{x}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ Y.\mathbf{x} + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y} + C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{x} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}((\mathbf{y}.\mathbf{x} + C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{x}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ I.\mathbf{u} + C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{x} + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \end{cases} \end{cases} \\ = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y}) + C_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{y}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \end{cases} \end{cases}$$

Previous Lemma

 $= X \cdot Y + C_{11}Y$

:.

Proof

PROPOSITION

$$= R(X,Y) + C_{u}Y$$

$$L(X,Y) = R(X,Y)$$
 by uniqueness

Consider the distributive property of this function over addition.

Z.(Y + X) = Z.Y + Z.XPROPOSITION Distribution over addition L(0,Y,Z) = Z.(Y + 0)Proof = Z.YDefn R(0,Y,Z) = Z.Y + Z.0 $= Z \cdot Y + 0$ Defn = Z.YDefn $L(S_{u}X,Y,Z) = Z.(Y + S_{u}X)$ $= z.s_u(Y + X)$ Defn $= Z \cdot (Y + X) + C_{11}Z$ Defn $= L(X,Y,Z) + C_{11}Z$

$$R(S_{u}X,Y,Z) = Z.Y + Z.S_{u}X$$

$$= Z.Y + Z.X + C_{u}Z \qquad Defn & Associative law of addition$$

$$= R(X,Y,Z) + C_{u}Z$$

$$L(X,Y,Z) = R(X,Y,Z)$$
 by uniqueness.

 $C_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{v}}X = C_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}X$

LEMMA

To prove associativity we require to prove the following Lemmas.

$$\begin{split} & R(0) = C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}O \\ & = C_{\mathbf{V}}O \\ & = 0 \end{split} \qquad \qquad & \text{Defn} \\ & = 0 \end{aligned}$$

$$L(S_{\mathbf{W}}X) = C_{\mathbf{U}}C_{\mathbf{V}}S_{\mathbf{W}}X \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{U}}C_{\mathbf{V}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \text{Defn} \\ C_{\mathbf{U}}S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{V}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \text{Defn} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{U}}C_{\mathbf{V}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{U}}C_{\mathbf{V}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{U}}C_{\mathbf{V}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}C_{\mathbf{V}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{U}}C_{\mathbf{V}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}C_{\mathbf{V}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} L(X) & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{V}}S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{W}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}X & \mathbf$$

by uniqueness.

L(X) = R(X)

$$C_{u}(Y + X) = C_{u}Y + C_{u}X$$

Proof

$$L(0,Y) = C_{u}(Y + 0)$$
$$= C_{u}Y$$

Defn

$$R(0,Y) = C_{u}Y + C_{u}O$$

= $C_{u}Y + O$

Defn

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} Y$$

Defn

$$L(S_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Y}}) = C_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{Y} + S_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{X}})$$
$$= C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{Y} + \mathbf{X})$$

Defn

$$=\begin{cases} S_v C_u(Y + X) & u=v \\ C_u(Y + X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

Defn

Defn

$$=\begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}L(X,Y) & u=v \\ L(X,Y) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

 $R(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y) = C_{\mathbf{u}}Y + C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{v}}X$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{Y} + S_{\mathbf{v}} C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{X} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} & \text{Defn} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{Y} + C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{X} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} & \text{Defn} \end{cases}$$
$$\{ S_{\mathbf{v}} (C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{Y} + C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{X}) \quad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \quad \text{Defn} \end{cases}$$

$$=\begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}Y + C_{\mathbf{u}}X) & \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}Y + C_{\mathbf{u}}X & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}} R(X, Y) & u = \mathbf{v} \\ R(X, Y) & u \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

:.

$$L(X,Y) = R(X,Y)$$

by uniqueness.

LEMMA

$$(C_uY) \cdot X = C_u(Y \cdot X)$$

and therefore by the commutativity property we can say $(C_uY).X = X.(C_uY)$.

PROPOSITION Z.(Y.X) = (Z.Y).X Associative

 $\underline{Proof} \qquad L(0,Y,Z) = Z.(Y.0)$

= Z.0 Defn

= 0 Defn

R(0,Y,Z) = (Z.Y).0

= 0 Defn

 $L(S_{u}X,Y,Z) = Z.(Y.S_{u}X)$ $= Z.(Y.X + C_{u}Y)$ Defn

= $Z.(Y.X) + Z.(C_{11}Y)$ Previous Lemma

$$= L(X,Y,Z) + C_{u}(Z,Y)$$

$$R(S_{u}X,Y,Z) = (Z,Y).S_{u}X$$

$$= (Z,Y).X + C_{u}(Z,Y)$$

$$= R(X,Y,Z) + C_{u}(Z,Y)$$
Defin

$$L(X,Y,Z) = R(X,Y,Z)$$

This function is not, however, distributive over σ_u functions, nor the τ_u functions, for all u. Though the distributive property is true in both cases with u=0, the first we have proved, the second we shall state, and leave the complete proof until chapter III.

$$Z.(Y - X) = Z.Y - Z.X$$
 Distributive over difference

Having established the properties of these three multiplication functions, we are now able to consider their squares, and possible square roots.

1. Vučković's multiplication function.

$$Y*0 = 0$$

 $Y*S_{u}X = Y*X \sigma_{u}Y$ $u=1,...,n$ $(\sigma_{n} = \sigma_{0})$

In 4 successor arithmetic the squares of numerals will be as follows.

<u>Numeral</u>	Square	<u>Numeral</u>	Square
0	0	S_1S_1O	S ₂ S ₂ S ₂ S ₂ 0
S ₁ 0	S_2O	S ₁ S ₂ 0	S ₂ S ₃ S ₃ S ₄ 0
S ₂ 0	S ₄ 0	S ₁ S ₃ 0	$S_2S_4S_4S_20$
S ₃ O	S ₂ 0	S ₁ S ₄ 0	$S_2 S_1 S_1 S_4 O$
S ₄ 0	S ₄ 0	S ₂ S ₂ 0	S 4S 4 S 4 S 4 O
		S ₂ S ₃ 0	$S_4S_1S_1S_20$

From the above table it can be seen that obviously there cannot be a useful square root function for this multiplication function, as both S_10 and S_30 have the same square.

2. The function defined by

$$Y^{X}O = 0$$

 $Y^{X}S_{11}X = Y^{X}X + Y$ $u=1,...,n$

In 4 successor arithmetic the squares of numerals will be as follows.

<u>Numeral</u>	Square	Numeral	Square
0	0	S_1S_1O	$S_1S_1S_1S_1O$
S ₁ 0	S ₁ 0	S ₁ S ₂ 0	$S_1 S_2 S_1 S_2 0$
S ₂ 0	S ₂ 0	S ₂ S ₃ 0	$S_2 S_3 S_2 S_3 O$
S ₃ 0	S ₃ 0	S ₁ S ₄ 0	$S_1S_4S_1S_4O$
S ₄ 0	840	S ₁ S ₃ S ₄ 0	S ₁ S ₃ S ₄ S ₁ S ₃ S ₄ S ₁ S ₃ S ₄ 0

This function does give a unique square, and further if a square root function could be found then a unique answer would be obtained for square roots of 'perfect squares' under this multiplication rule. It can be seen that the square of a numeral is that numeral repeated the same number of times as there are successor symbols in that numeral. Therefore in order to obtain the square root of a numeral we would first have to analyse the number of successor symbols in that numeral, take the square root of that number, then further either analyse the particular successor symbols or 'divide' the numeral by the square root of the number of successor symbols. The questions of the number of successor symbols in a numeral, and the particular successor symbols which make up that numeral have been fully analysed in chapter IV.

It can be seen from the above that a square root function of this multiplication function would not be a 'convenient' function and therefore we shall leave this function and consider the third multiplication function.

3. The function defined by

$$Y.0 = 0$$

$$Y.S_{u}X = Y.X + C_{u}Y \qquad u=1,...,n$$

Consider the squares of numerals in 4 successor arithmetic.

Numeral	Square	<u>Numeral</u>	Square
0	0	S_1S_2O	S_1S_2O
S ₁ 0	S ₁ 0	S ₂ \$ ₃ 0	S ₂ S ₃ 0
S ₂ 0	S ₂ 0	S_2S_2O	$S_2 S_2 S_2 S_2 S_2 O$
S ₃ 0	S ₃ 0	$S_1S_1S_40$	$S_1S_1S_1S_1S_40$
S ₄ 0	S ₄ 0	S ₄ S ₄ S ₄ O	S ₄

This appears to have a very reasonable square, which is the numeral split into components, and each component squared. To obtain the square root therefore we would first have to take components and then take the square root as in single successor arithmetic. Thus we would have functions Rt₁₁(X) defined by:-

$$Rt_{\mathbf{u}}(0) = 0$$

$$Rt_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X) = \begin{cases} Rt_{\mathbf{u}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}X) + C_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}0 - ((S_{\mathbf{v}}Rt_{\mathbf{u}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}X))^{2} - S_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}X)) & u=\mathbf{v} \\ Rt_{\mathbf{u}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}X) & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

That is $\mathrm{Rt}_{\mathrm{u}}(\mathtt{X})$ is the square root of the 'S_u' successor symbols in X, the complete square root of X would then be given by $\mathrm{Rt}(\mathtt{X})$ defined by

$$Rt(X) = Rt_1(X) + Rt_2(X) + \dots + Rt_n(X)$$
.

However we can avoid the Rt₁₁(X) functions by the definition

$$Rt(0) = 0$$

$$Rt(S_uX) = Rt(X) + (S_uO - ((S_uRt(X))^2 - S_uX)) \qquad u=1,...,n$$

The components are taken by the property that

$$C_u(S_u \circ - A) = (S_u \circ - A)$$
.

For this function to be the one required the following properties need to be satisfied:

$$Rt(X.X) = X$$

$$Rt(X.X + X) = X$$

$$Rt((Y + X)^2 + X) = Y + X$$
 $((Y + X)^2 = (Y + X) \cdot (Y + X)$

Further if Y > X that is X - Y = 0, then Rt(Y) > Rt(X), that is Rt(X) - Rt(Y) = 0.

All these properties will be proved formally in chapter III.

Further, we need to prove the properties

$$L(J(U,V)) = U$$

$$K(J(U,V)) = V$$
.

CHAPTER III

FORMAL DEVELOPMENT OF COMMUTATIVE MULTIPLE SUCCESSOR ARITHMETIC

In this chapter we will develop the arithmetic formally and prove the properties of some of the functions already introduced in previous chapters. The notation used will be to number all axioms, rules of inference, definitions, lemmas, propositions, and theorems. The steps in a proof will then by illustrated by a number corresponding to the statement used on the right-hand side of the page. For the substitution rule of inference and equality rules numbering will not be used.

The functional notation L(...) and R(...) will be used to denote the left- and right-hand sides of equations. Where a letter is quoted in the parenthesis of L(...) or R(...) and does not appear on the corresponding side of the equation, then the zero function Z(...) of that letter is supposed to have been taken.

e.g. R(X) = 0 should be taken as R(X) = Z(X), which will not affect the proof.

A proof will conclude with the statement L(...) = R(...). Statements 1 to 6 give the axiomatic statement of the arithmetic.

1. Initial functions

$$S_{u}(X)$$
 written $S_{u}X$ u=1,...,n

$$I_i^k(X_1,X_2,...,X_k)$$
 written X_i

2. Commutative condition

$$S_u S_v X = S_v S_u X$$
 $u,v=1,...,n$

Definition of functions by explicit and primitive recursive definitions, the latter given by:-

If $A(Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m)$ and $B_u(X,Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m,Z)$ u=1,...,n, are designated functions (initial functions or previously defined) then $F(X,Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m) \ \text{is designated if}$

$$F(0,Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m) = A(Y_1,Y_2,...,Y_m)$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m}) = B_{u}(X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m},F(X,Y_{1},Y_{2},...,Y_{m}))$$
 u=1,...,n

and

in order to preserve the commutativity of the successors.

3. Rule of inference (equality rule)

A = B This statement reads: 'If A is equal to B and A is equal to C then B is equal to C'. B = C

4. Rule of inference (substitution)

$$\frac{F(Y) = G(Y)}{F(A) = G(A)}$$

5. Rule of inference (substitution)

$$\frac{A = B}{F(A) = F(B)}$$

6. Rule of inference (uniqueness rule)

$$F(0) = G(0)$$

$$F(S_u^X) = H_u(X,F(X))$$

$$\frac{G(S_u^X) = H_u(X,G(X))}{F(X) = G(X)}$$

$$u=1,...,n$$

7. Definition of Y + X

$$Y + O = Y$$

$$Y + S_u^X = S_u(Y + X)$$
 $u=1,...,n$

8. Proposition A = A

Proof Y + 0 = Y

Y + O = Y 7.

Y + O = Y 7.

9. Rule of inference

A = B

Y = Y

B = A

Proof A = B

A = A

B = A

B Premises

8,

3.

3.

9.

10. Rule of inference

A = B

B = C

A = C

Proof A = B Premises

B = A

B = C Premises

A = C 3.

11. Rule of inference

$$B = A$$

$$C = A$$

$$B = C$$

Proof

$$B = A$$

$$A = B$$

$$C = A$$

$$A = C$$

$$B = C$$

Premises

9.

Premises

9.

3.

12. Rule of inference

$$A = B$$

$$A = C$$

$$B = D$$

$$C = D$$

Proof

$$A = B$$

$$A = C$$

$$B = C$$

$$B = D$$

$$C = D$$

Premises

Premises

3.

Premises

3.

13. Proposition

$$0 + X = X$$

Proof

$$L(0) = 0 + 0$$

$$R(0) = 0$$

$$L(S_{u}X) = 0 + S_{u}X$$
$$= S_{u}(0 + X)$$
$$= S_{u}L(X)$$

7.

$$R(S_{u}X) = S_{u}X$$

$$= S_{u}R(X)$$

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
6.

14. Proposition

$$S_u Y + X = S_u (Y + X)$$

Proof

$$L(0,Y) = S_{u}Y + 0$$

$$= S_{u}Y$$

$$R(0,Y) = S_{u}(Y + 0)$$

$$= S_{u}Y$$
7.

$$L(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y) = S_{\mathbf{u}}Y + S_{\mathbf{v}}X$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}Y + X)$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}}L(X,Y)$$
7.

$$R(S_{v}X,Y) = S_{u}(Y + S_{v}X)$$

$$= S_{u}S_{v}(Y + X)$$

$$= S_{v}S_{u}(Y + X)$$

$$= S_{v}R(X,Y)$$
7.

$$L(X,Y) = R(X,Y)$$
 6.

15. Proposition

$$X + Y = Y + X$$

$$L(0,Y) = 0 + Y$$

$$= Y$$
 $R(0,Y) = Y + 0$

$$= Y$$
 $L(S_uX,Y) = S_uX + Y$

$$= S_{u}(X + Y)$$

$$= S_{u}L(X,Y)$$
14.

$$R(S_{u}X,Y) = Y + S_{u}X$$

$$= S_{u}(Y + X)$$

$$= S_{u}R(X,Y)$$

$$L(X,Y) = R(X,Y)$$
6.

16. Proposition

$$(A + B) + C = A + (B + C)$$

Proof
$$L(0,B,C) = (0+B)+C$$

 $= B+C$ 13.
 $R(0,B,C) = 0+(B+C)$
 $= B+C$ 13.
 $L(S_uA,B,C) = (S_uA+B)+C$ 14.
 $= S_u(A+B)+C$ 14.

=
$$S_u((A + B) + C)$$
 14.
= $S_uL(A,B,C)$

$$R(S_u^A, B, C) = S_u^A + (B + C)$$

= $S_u(A + (B + C))$ 14.

$$L(A,B,C) = R(A,B,C)$$
 6.

17. Definition of P_uX

$$P_{\mathbf{u}}^{0} = 0$$

$$P_{\mathbf{u}}^{S} \mathbf{v}^{X} = \begin{cases} X & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ S_{\mathbf{v}} P_{\mathbf{u}}^{X} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

18. Definition of Y - X

$$Y \stackrel{\bullet}{-} 0 = Y$$

 $Y \stackrel{\bullet}{-} S_u X = P_u (Y \stackrel{\bullet}{-} X)$

18.

19. Proposition

$$0 - X = 0$$

Proof

$$L(0) = 0 - 0$$
$$= 0$$

$$R(0) = 0$$

$$L(S_{u}X) = 0 - S_{u}X$$

$$= P_{u}(0 - X)$$

$$= P_{u}L(X)$$
18.

$$R(S_{u}X) = 0$$

$$= P_{u}R(X)$$
17.

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
 6.

20. Proposition

$$(C - B) - A = C - (B + A)$$

= C - B

Proof

$$L(0,B,C) = (C - B) - 0$$

= $C - B$ 18.

$$R(0,B,C) = C - (B + 0)$$

$$= C - B$$

$$L(S_uA,B,C) = (C - B) - S_uA$$

$$= P_u((C - B) - A)$$

$$= P_uL(A,B,C)$$
18.

$$R(S_{u}A,B,C) = C - (B + S_{u}A)$$

$$= C - S_{u}(B + A)$$

$$= P_{u}(C - (B + A))$$

$$= P_{u}R(A,B,C)$$
18.

$$L(A,B,C) = R(A,B,C)$$
 6.

21. Proposition

$$S_{\mathbf{u}}B - S_{\mathbf{u}}A = B - A$$

Proof

$$L(0,B) = S_u B - S_u 0$$
$$= P_u(S_u B - 0)$$

$$= P_u S_u B$$

$$R(0,B) = B - 0$$

$$L(S_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{A},\mathbf{B}}) = S_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{B}} - S_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{S}} S_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{A}}$$

$$= S_u B - S_v S_u A$$

$$= P_v(S_uB - S_uA)$$

$$= P_vL(A,B)$$

$$R(S_v^A,B) = B - S_v^A$$

=
$$P_{\mathbf{v}}R(A,B)$$

$$L(A,B) = R(A,B)$$

22.

$$A - A = 0$$

Proof

$$L(0) = 0 - 0$$

$$R(0) = 0$$

$$L(S_u^A) = S_u^A - S_u^A$$

$$= L(A)$$

$$R(S_{u}A) = 0$$

$$= R(A)$$

$$L(A) = R(A)$$

6.

18.

7.

7.

21.

6.

7.

6.

23.
$$(B + A) - A = B$$

Proof
$$L(0,B) = (B + 0) - 0$$

= B + 0
= B

$$R(0,B) = B$$

$$L(S_{u}A,B) = (B + S_{u}A) - S_{u}A$$
$$= S_{u}(B + A) - S_{u}A$$
$$= (B + A) - A$$

$$R(S_uA,B) = B$$

= $R(A,B)$
 $L(A,B) = R(A,B)$

$$(B+A) - (C+A) = B - C$$

24.

Propof
$$L(0,B,C) = (B + 0) - (C + 0)$$

= B - C

$$R(0,B,C) = B - C$$

$$L(S_{u}A,B,C) = (B + S_{u}A) - (C + S_{u}A)$$

$$= S_{u}(B + A) - S_{u}(C + A)$$

$$= (B + A) - (C + A)$$
21.

$$= L(A,B,C)$$

$$R(S_uA,B,C) = B - C$$

$$= R(A,B,C)$$

$$L(A,B,C) = R(A,B,C)$$

25.
$$B - (B + A) = 0$$

Proof
$$L(0,B) = B - (B + 0)$$

= $B - B$ 7.

$$R(0,B) = 0$$

$$L(S_{\mathbf{u}}A,B) = B - (B + S_{\mathbf{u}}A)$$

$$= B - S_{\mathbf{u}}(B + A)$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{u}}(B - (B + A))$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{u}}L(A,B)$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{u}}A,B) = 0$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{u}}0$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{u}}R(A,B)$$

$$L(A,B) = R(A,B)$$

$$6.$$

26. Rule of inference

$$F(0) = G(0)$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = G(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) \qquad \mathbf{n=1,2,...,r}$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = H_{\mathbf{u}}(X,F(X)) \qquad \mathbf{u=r+1,...,n}$$

$$G(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = H_{\mathbf{u}}(X,G(X)) \qquad \mathbf{u=r+1,...,n}$$

$$F(X) = G(X)$$

Proof Define
$$M_{u}(X,Y)$$
 by
$$M_{u}(X,Y) = \begin{cases} F(S_{u}X) & u=1,2,...,r \\ H_{u}(X,Y) & u=r+1,...,n \end{cases}$$
 Now $F(S_{u}X) = G(S_{u}X) \qquad u=1,2,...,r$ Hence $M_{u}(X,Y) = \begin{cases} G(S_{u}X) & u=1,2,...,r \\ H_{u}(X,Y) & u=r+1,...,n \end{cases}$

We now have
$$F(0) = G(0)$$

$$F(S_uX) = M_u(X,Y) \qquad u=1,...,n$$

$$G(S_uX) = M_u(X,Y) \qquad u=1,...,n$$
Hence
$$F(X) = G(X)$$

6.

$$C_{\mathbf{u}}^{0} = 0$$

$$C_{\mathbf{u}}^{0} = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}^{0} C_{\mathbf{u}}^{0} X & u = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}^{0} X & u \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

28.
$$C_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{v}}A = \begin{cases} 0 & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

Proof
$$L(0) = C_u C_v 0$$

$$= c_{\mathbf{u}}^{0}$$
 27.

$$R(0) = 0$$

$$L(S_{\mathbf{w}}A) = C_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}C_{\mathbf{v}}A & \mathbf{v}=\mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{v}}A & \mathbf{v}\neq\mathbf{w} \end{cases} \qquad 27.$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}} C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}} C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}} C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}} C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}} C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_w L(A) & u=v=w \\ L(A) & u\neq w \text{ or } v\neq w \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{w}}A) = \begin{cases} 0 & u \neq \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A & u = \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases}
0 & u \neq v \\
S_{w}^{C} A & u = v = w \\
C_{v} A & u = v & u \neq w
\end{cases}$$
27.

$$\begin{cases}
S_{\mathbf{w}}^{\mathbf{C}} \mathbf{u}^{\mathbf{A}} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \\
0 & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v}
\end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases}
C_{\mathbf{A}} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \\
\mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v}
\end{cases}$$

$$\mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \quad \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}} R(A) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \\ R(A) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \text{ or } \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$L(A) = R(A) \qquad \qquad 6.$$

$$29. \qquad C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{v}} A = C_{\mathbf{v}} C_{\mathbf{u}} A$$

$$Proof \qquad C_{\mathbf{u}} C_{\mathbf{y}} A = \begin{cases} 0 & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{v}} A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{v}} C_{\mathbf{u}} A \qquad 27.$$

$$30. \qquad C_{\mathbf{u}} (B + A) = C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} A$$

$$Proof \qquad L(0, B) = C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} A$$

$$R(0, B) = C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} O$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B \qquad 7.$$

$$R(0, B) = C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} O$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B \qquad 7.$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}} C_{\mathbf{u}} (B + A) \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}} C_{\mathbf{u}} (B + A) \qquad \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}} C_{\mathbf{u}} (B + A) \qquad \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}} C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} B + C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}} A \qquad \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \qquad 27.$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}R(A,B) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ R(A,B) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$\mathbf{L}(A,B) = R(A,B) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$\mathbf{L}(O) = C_{\mathbf{u}}P_{\mathbf{v}}O$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}}O & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}O & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} O & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}O & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} O & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ O & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}P_{\mathbf{v}}A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}P_{\mathbf{v}}A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}}C_{\mathbf{u}}P_{\mathbf{v}}A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}}L(A) & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}}L(A) & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}}L(A) & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}}L(A) & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}}L(A) & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

27.

32.

Proof

 $= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{w}} C_{\mathbf{u}} A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} & \& \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$

$$L(S_{\mathbf{V}}^{\mathbf{A}}, \mathbf{B}) = C_{\mathbf{U}}(\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{A})$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{U}}P_{\mathbf{V}}(\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbf{A}) \quad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{V}}C_{\mathbf{U}}(\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbf{A}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{U}}(\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbf{A}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \qquad \mathbf{31}.$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{V}}L(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \\ L(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{V}}^{\mathbf{A}}, \mathbf{B}) = C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}S_{\mathbf{V}}\mathbf{A}$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \qquad \mathbf{27}.$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{V}}(C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{U} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{U} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{U} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{U} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{U} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}A & \mathbf{U} \neq \mathbf{v} \qquad \mathbf{18}.$$

$$C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{U}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\cdot}$$

33.

34.
$$S_{\mathbf{v}}B \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{u}}A = S_{\mathbf{v}}(B \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{u}}A) \quad u \neq v$$
Proof
$$L(0,B) = S_{\mathbf{v}}B \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{\mathbf{u}}0$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}}B \stackrel{\cdot}{-} 0$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}} B$$
 18.

$$R(0,B) = S_v(B - C_u^0)$$

= $S_v(B - 0)$ 27.

$$= S_{\mathbf{v}} B$$
 18.

$$L(S_{\mathbf{w}}^{\mathbf{A}}, B) = S_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{B}} - C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{S}} A$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{B}} - S_{\mathbf{w}}^{\mathbf{C}} A & u=w \\ S_{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{B}} - C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{A}} & u\neq w \end{cases} \qquad 27.$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{w}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{v}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{w}}L(A,B) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$
18.

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{w}} L(A,B) & u=\mathbf{w} \\ L(A,B) & u\neq\mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{w}}^{\mathbf{A}}, \mathbf{B}) = S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{B} - C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}^{\mathbf{A}})$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{B} - S_{\mathbf{w}}C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{A}}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} & 27. \\ S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{B} - C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{A}}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}P_{\mathbf{w}}(\mathbf{B} - C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{A}}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} & 18. \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{B} - C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{A}}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \\ S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{B} - C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{A}}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{w}}S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{B} - C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{A}}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} & (\mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \text{ and } \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w}) \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{w}}S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{B} - C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{A}}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} & (\mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \text{ and } \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w}) \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{w}}S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{B} - C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{A}}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} & (\mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \text{ and } \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w}) \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{B} - C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{A}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{w}}R(\mathbf{A},\mathbf{B}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{w}} R(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} \\ R(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$L(A,B) = R(A,B)$$

35.
$$P_{\mathbf{v}}B + C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{A} = P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{A}) \qquad u \neq \mathbf{v}$$

$$Proof$$

$$L(0,B) = P_{\mathbf{v}}B + C_{\mathbf{u}}0$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{v}}B + 0 \qquad 27.$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{v}}B \qquad 7.$$

$$R(0,B) = P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}0)$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + 0) \qquad 27.$$

$$= P_{\mathbf{v}}B \qquad 7.$$

$$L(S_{\mathbf{w}}A,B) = P_{\mathbf{v}}B + C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}B + S_{\mathbf{w}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u = \mathbf{w} & 27. \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u \neq \mathbf{w} & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}}(P_{\mathbf{v}}B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u = \mathbf{w} & 7. \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u \neq \mathbf{w} & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{w}}(A,B) & u = \mathbf{w} \\ L(A,B) & u \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{w}}A,B) = P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A) & u = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u = \mathbf{w} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & u \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$L(A,B) = R(A,B)$$
 6.

u=w

u≠w

 $\left\{P_{\mathbf{x}}(\mathbf{B} + \mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{x}}\mathbf{A}) \quad \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w}\right\}$

 $= \{S_{\mathbf{w}}^{\mathbf{R}}(A,B)$

{R(A,B)

36.
$$(B + C_{u}A) - C_{v}A = (B - C_{v}A) + C_{u}A \quad u \neq v$$

= B

$$L(0,B) = (B + C_{u}0) - C_{v}0$$

= $(B + 0) - 0$ 27.

$$R(0,B) = (B - C_v^0) + C_u^0$$

= $(B - 0) + 0$ 27.

$$L(S_{\mathbf{w}}A,B) = (B + C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A) - C_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A$$

$$= \{(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A) - S_{\mathbf{w}}C_{\mathbf{v}}A \quad \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} \quad 27.$$

$$\{(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A) - C_{\mathbf{v}}A \quad \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} \quad 27.$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{w}}((B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) - C_{\mathbf{v}}A) & \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w} & 18. \\ S_{\mathbf{w}}(B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) - C_{\mathbf{v}}A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{w} & 7. \\ (B + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) - C_{\mathbf{v}}A & \mathbf{v} \neq \mathbf{w} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{w} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}((B + C_{u}A) - C_{v}A) & v=w \\ S_{w}((B + C_{u}A) - C_{v}A) & v \neq w & u=w \\ (B + C_{u}A) - C_{v}A & v \neq w & u \neq w \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}L(A,B) & v=w \\ S_{w}L(A,B) & v\neq w & u=w \\ L(A,B) & v\neq w & u\neq w \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{w}A,B) = (B - C_{v}S_{w}A) + C_{v}S_{w}A$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B - S_{w}C_{v}A) + C_{u}S_{w}A & v=w & 27. \\ (B - C_{v}A) + C_{u}S_{w}A & v\neq w & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B - S_{w}C_{v}A) + C_{u}A & v=w & (u\neq v \text{ and } \therefore u\neq w) & 27. \\ (B - C_{v}A) + S_{w}C_{u}A & v\neq w & u=w & 27. \\ (B - C_{v}A) + S_{w}C_{u}A & v\neq w & u\neq w & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(B - C_{v}A) + C_{u}A & v\neq w & u\neq w & 27. \\ (B - C_{v}A) + C_{u}A & v\neq w & u\neq w & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(B - C_{v}A) + C_{u}A & v\neq w & u\neq w & 7. \\ (B - C_{v}A) + C_{u}A & v\neq w & u\neq w & 28. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}((B - C_{v}A) + C_{u}A) & v\neq w & u\neq w & 28. \\ S_{w}((B - C_{v}A) + C_{u}A) & v\neq w & u\neq w & 28. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(B - C_{v}A) + C_{u}A & v\neq w & u\neq w & 28. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(A,B) & v\neq w & u\neq w & 28. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(A,B) & v\neq w & u\neq w & 28. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(A,B) & v\neq w & u\neq w & 28. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(A,B) & v\neq w & u\neq w & 28. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(A,B) & v\neq w & u\neq w & 29. \end{cases}$$

$$= C_{u}B - C_{v}A & u\neq w & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= C_{u}B - C_{v}A & v\neq w & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(A,B) & P_{w}A & P_{w}A & P_{w}A & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(A,B) - P_{w}A & P_{w}A & P_{w}A & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(A,B) - P_{w}A & P_{w}A & P_{w}A & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(B,C_{w}A) - P_{w}A & P_{w}A & P_{w}A & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(C_{u}B - C_{v}A) - P_{w}A & P_{w}A & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(C_{u}B - C_{v}A) - P_{w}A & P_{w}A & P_{w}A & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(C_{u}B - C_{v}A) - P_{w}A & P_{w}A & P_{w}A & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(C_{u}B - C_{v}A) - P_{w}A & P_{w}A$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}L(A,E) & v \neq w \\ L(A,B) & v \neq w \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{w}A,B) = C_{u}B$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{u}B + 0 & v \neq w \\ C_{u}B & v \neq w \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{u}B + P_{w}O & v = w \\ C_{u}B & v \neq w \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}(C_{u}B + O) & v = w \\ C_{u}B & v \neq w \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}C_{u}B + O & v = w \\ C_{u}B & v \neq w \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}C_{u}B & v = w \\ C_{u}B & v \neq w \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}C_{u}B & v = w \\ C_{u}B & v \neq w \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{w}R(A,B) & v \neq w \\ R(A,B) & v \neq w \end{cases}$$

38. $P_{\mathbf{u}}P_{\mathbf{v}}A = P_{\mathbf{v}}P_{\mathbf{u}}A$

Proof

$$L(0) = P_{u}P_{v}0$$

$$= P_{u}0 17.$$

$$= 0 17.$$

$$R(0) = P_{v}P_{u}0$$

$$= P_{v}0 17.$$

= 0 17.

 $L(S_{\mathbf{w}}A) = P_{\mathbf{u}}P_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{w}}A$

L(A,B) = R(A,B)

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & v=w & 17. \\ P_{u}S_{w}P_{v}A & v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & v=w \\ P_{v}A & v\neq w \& u=w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & v=w & v\neq w \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & v=w & or u=w \\ S_{w}L(A,B) & v\neq w \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{v}A & u=w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{v}A & u=w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{v}A & u=w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{v}A & u\neq w \& v=w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{v}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w \& v\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq w & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{u}A & u\neq$$

Proof

Ö

u≠w

27.

40.

$$= \begin{cases} C_{u}A & u=w & \& v=w \\ S_{w}P_{v}C_{u}A & u=w & \& v\neq w \end{cases}$$
 17.
$$\begin{cases} S_{w}P_{v}C_{u}A & u=w & \& v\neq w \\ P_{v}C_{u}A & u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 17.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u=v=w \\ C_{u}S_{w}A & u\neq v \end{cases}$$
 17.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}S_{w}A & u=v \\ C_{u}S_{w}A & u\neq v \end{cases}$$
 17.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}S_{w}P_{v}A & u=v & \& v\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 17.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 27.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u=v=w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 27.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u=v=w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 27.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 27.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 27.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 27.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 27.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 27.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 27.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq v & \& u\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 28.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& u\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 29.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& u\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& u\neq w \end{cases}$$
 26.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& v\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& v\neq w \end{cases}$$
 26.
$$\begin{cases} C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& v\neq w \\ C_{u}A & u\neq w & \& v\neq w \end{cases}$$
 26.

 $C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\bullet}{-} \mathbf{A} = C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{B} \stackrel{\bullet}{-} C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{A}$

$$L(0,B) = C_uB - 0$$

$$= C_uB$$
18.

$$R(0,B) = C_{u}B - C_{u}0$$

= $C_{u}B - 0$ 27.
= $C_{u}B$ 18.

$$L(S_{\mathbf{v}}A,B) = C_{\mathbf{u}}B - S_{\mathbf{v}}A$$
$$= P_{\mathbf{v}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}B - A)$$
18.

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}(C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} - \mathbf{A}) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ P_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} - \mathbf{A} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$
39.

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}B - A) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B - A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}L(A,B) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ L(A,B) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{v}}A,B) = C_{\mathbf{u}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{v}}A$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}B - S_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$(C_{\mathbf{u}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}A + C_{\mathbf{u}}A) = \mathbf{v}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}A) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} P_{\mathbf{v}}R(A,B) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ R(A,B) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$L(A,B) = R(A,B)$$
 6.

$$S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ \dot{-} A = S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ \dot{-} C_{\mathbf{u}} A$$

Proof
$$C_u S_u O = S_u C_u O$$
 27. $= S_u O$ 27.

$$S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - A = C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - A$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - C_{\mathbf{u}} A$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - C_{\mathbf{u}} A$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - C_{\mathbf{u}} A$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - C_{\mathbf{u}} A$$

43. Definition of Y.X

$$Y \cdot 0 = 0$$

$$Y \cdot S_u X = Y \cdot X + C_u Y$$
 $u=1,\ldots,n$

0.X = 044.

L(0) = 0.0Pro of

≟ 0 43.

R(0) = 0

 $L(S_u^X) = O.S_u^X$ $= 0.X + C_u^0$ 43.

> = 0.X + 027.

= 0.X7. = L(X)

 $R(S_{u}X) = 0$ = R(X)

L(X) = R(X)6.

 $S_{\mathbf{u}} Y \cdot X = Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{u}} X$ 45.

Proof

 $L(0,Y) = S_{u}Y.0$ = 0 43.

> $R(0,Y) = Y.0 + C_{u}^{0}$ = 0 + 027. = 0

$$L(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y) = S_{\mathbf{u}}Y \cdot S_{\mathbf{v}}X$$

$$= S_{\mathbf{u}}Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}S_{\mathbf{u}}Y$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}}Y \cdot X + S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{v}}Y & \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{v} \\ S_{\mathbf{u}}Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}Y \cdot X) + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y & \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{v} \\ S_{\mathbf{u}}Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}Y \cdot X) + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \\ S_{\mathbf{u}}Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(L(X,Y) + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y) & \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{v} \\ L(X,Y) + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y) = Y \cdot S_{\mathbf{v}}X + C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{v}}X$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,Y) = Y \cdot S_{\mathbf{v}}X + C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{v}}X$$

$$= \begin{cases} Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y + S_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}X & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y + C_{\mathbf{u}}X & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y + C_{\mathbf{u}}X) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y + C_{\mathbf{u}}X & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y + C_{\mathbf{u}}X) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y + C_{\mathbf{u}}X & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{u}}X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ Y \cdot X + C_{\mathbf{u}}X + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}(R(X,Y) + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y) & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ R(X,Y) + C_{\mathbf{v}}Y & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$L(X,Y) = R(X,Y)$$
 6.

46. X.Y = Y.X

$$R(0,Y) = Y.0$$

= 0 43.

$$\begin{split} L(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y) &= S_{\mathbf{u}}X.Y \\ &= X.Y + C_{\mathbf{u}}Y \\ &= L(X,Y) + C_{\mathbf{u}}Y \\ R(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,Y) &= Y.S_{\mathbf{u}}X \\ &= Y.X + C_{\mathbf{u}}Y \\ &= R(X,Y) + C_{\mathbf{u}}Y \\ L(X,Y) &= R(X,Y) \\ &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.C_{\mathbf{u}}A \\ L(0,B) &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.C_{\mathbf{u}}A \\ L(0,B) &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.C_{\mathbf{u}}O \\ &= C_{\mathbf{u}}D \\ &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.O \\ &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.O \\ &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.O \\ &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.A + C_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{v}}B \\ &= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}(B.A) + C_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{v}}B & u=v \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}(B.A) + C_{\mathbf{u}}B & u=v \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B.C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq v \\ &= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}B.S_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u=v \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B.S_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq v \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B.C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq v \\ &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.S_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq v \\ &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq v \\ &= C_{\mathbf{u}}B.S_{$$

 $= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{A} + C_{\mathbf{v}} C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{A} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$

43.

47.

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}} B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}} A + C_{\mathbf{u}} B & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}} A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} R(A, B) + C_{\mathbf{u}} B & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ R(A, B) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$L(A,B) = R(A,B)$$
 6.

 $C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{A} = C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{A}$

Proof
$$L(0,B) = C_uB \cdot 0$$
$$= 0 43.$$

$$R(0,B) = C_u B \cdot C_u 0$$

$$= C_u B \cdot 0$$
27.

$$L(S_{\mathbf{v}}A,B) = C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot S_{\mathbf{v}}A$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad 43.$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B & \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B & \mathbf{u}\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \left\{ L(A,B) + C_{u}B \qquad u=v \right\}$$

$$\left\{ L(A,B) \qquad u\neq v \right\}$$

$$(A,B) = C_{u}B \cdot C_{u}S \cdot A$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{v}}A,B) = C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{v}}A$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot S_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u=\mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}}A + C_{\mathbf{v}}C_{\mathbf{u}}B & u=\mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq\mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq\mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}}A & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{A} + C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B} \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{A} & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$
 28.

$$= \{R(A,B) + C_uB \qquad u=v \\ \{R(A,B) \qquad u\neq v \}$$

$$L(A,B) = R(A,B)$$
 6.

$$C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{B} = \mathbf{A} \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{B}$$

Proof
$$C_uA \cdot B = C_uA \cdot C_uB$$
 48.
 $= C_uB \cdot C_uA$ 46.
 $= C_uB \cdot A$ 48.

$$= A \cdot C_{\mathbf{u}} B$$
 46.

50.
$$C.(B + A) = C.B + C.A$$

Proof

L(0,B,C) = C.(B + 0)

$$R(0,B,C) = C.B + C.0$$

= $C.B + 0$ 43.

$$L(S_uA,B,C) = C.(B + S_uA)$$

= $C.S_u(B + A)$ 7.
= $C.(B + A) + C_uC$ 43.

$$= L(A,B,C) + C_uC$$

$$R(S_uA,B,C) = C.B + C.S_uA$$

= $C.B + C.A + C_uC$ 43.
= $R(A,B,C) + C_uC$

$$L(A,B,C) = R(A,B,C)$$
 6.

51. (C.B).A = C.(B.A)

Proof L(0,B,C) = (C.B).0

= 0 43.

R(0,B,C) = C.(B.0)= C.0 43.

= 0 43.

 $L(S_u^A, B, C) = (C.B).S_u^A$ = $(C.B).A + C_u(C.B)$ 43. = $L(A, B, C) + C_u(C.B)$

 $R(S_{u}A,B,C) = C \cdot (B \cdot S_{u}A)$ $= C \cdot (B \cdot A + C_{u}B)$ 43.

= $C.(B.A) + C.C_uB$ 50.

= $C \cdot (B \cdot A) + C_u(C \cdot B)$ 47.48.49. = $R(A,B,C) + C_u(C \cdot B)$

L(A,B,C) = R(A,B,C) 6.

52. $B \cdot P_{\mathbf{u}} A = B \cdot A - C_{\mathbf{u}} B$

= 0

Proof $L(0,B) = B \cdot P_u 0$ = $B \cdot 0$ 17.

= 0 43.

19.

 $R(0,B) = B.0 - C_uB$ = 0 - C_uB

$$L(S_{\mathbf{v}}A,B) = B \cdot P_{\mathbf{u}} S_{\mathbf{v}}A$$

$$= \begin{cases} B \cdot A & u = v \\ B \cdot S_{\mathbf{v}} P_{\mathbf{u}}A & u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} B \cdot A & u = v \\ B \cdot P_{\mathbf{u}}A + C_{\mathbf{v}}B & u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} B \cdot A & u = v \\ L(A,B) + C_{\mathbf{v}}B & u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{v}}A,B) = B \cdot S_{\mathbf{v}}A \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B$$

$$= (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{v}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u = v \\ (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} (B \cdot A + C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \stackrel{?}{=} C_{\mathbf{u}}B \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= C \cdot B \stackrel{?}{=} C \cdot A \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= C \cdot B \stackrel{?}{=} C \cdot A \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= C \cdot B \stackrel{?}{=} C \cdot A \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= C \cdot B \stackrel{?}{=} C \cdot A \qquad u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= C \cdot B \stackrel{?}{=} C \cdot A \qquad u \neq v \qquad$$

$$R(S_{u}A,B,C) = C.B - C.S_{u}A$$

$$= C.B - (C.A + C_{u}C)$$

$$= (C.B - C.A) - C_{u}C$$

$$= R(A,B,C) - C_{u}C$$

$$L(A,B,C) = R(A,B,C)$$
6.

54. Definition of A,B

$$[A,B] = (A - B) + (B - A)$$

55. Rule of inference

$$A + B = 0$$

$$A = 0$$

$$B = 0$$

A + B = 0

Proof

$$A = (A + B) - B$$

$$= 0 - B$$

$$= 0$$

$$B = (A + B) - A$$

$$= 0 - A$$

Premises

Premises

19.

23. 15.

Premises

56. Rule of inference

$$A = B$$

$$A \cdot B = 0$$

$$B \cdot A = 0$$

= 0

Proof

Proof

$$A = B$$

$$A \stackrel{\bullet}{\cdot} B = B \stackrel{\bullet}{\cdot} B$$

$$= 0$$

$$B \stackrel{\bullet}{\cdot} A = B \stackrel{\bullet}{\cdot} B$$

= 0

Premises

5•

22.

Premises. 5.

22.

57. Rule of inference

$$F(S_{u}X) = F(X)$$

$$F(X) = F(0)$$

$$L(0) = F(0)$$

$$R(0) = F(0)$$

$$L(S_{u}X) = F(S_{u}X)$$

$$= F(X)$$

$$= L(X)$$

$$R(S_{u}X) = F(0)$$

$$= R(X)$$

$$L(X) = R(X)$$
6.

58. Rule of inference

$$F(0,Y) = 0$$

$$F(X,0) = 0$$

$$\frac{F(C_uS_uX,C_uS_uY) = F(C_uX,C_uY)}{F(C_uX,C_uY)} \text{ for one value of } u.$$

Proof

Consider first

(a)
$$F(C_uS_uX,C_uY) = F(C_uX,C_u(Y - S_uO))$$

Proof $L(X,O) = F(C_uS_uX,C_uO)$

Now consider

(b)
$$F(C_{11}X,C_{11}Y) = F(C_{11}(X - S_{11}O),C_{11}(Y - S_{11}O))$$

Proof
$$\begin{split} & L(0,Y) = \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}0) \\ & = \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,0) \qquad 27. \\ & = 0 \qquad \qquad \text{Premises} \\ & \mathbb{R}(0,Y) = \mathbb{F}(C_{u}(X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}),C_{u}(0 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \\ & = \mathbb{F}(C_{u}(X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}),C_{u}^{0}) \qquad 19. \\ & = \mathbb{F}(C_{u}(X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}),0) \qquad 27. \\ & = 0 \qquad \qquad \text{Premises} \\ & L(S_{q}X,Y) = \mathbb{F}(C_{u}S_{q}X,C_{u}Y) \qquad u=v \qquad 27. \\ & \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}Y) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 27. \\ & = \begin{cases} \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}Y) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 27. \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}Y) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 27. \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u=v \qquad (a) \\ \mathbb{E}(X,Y) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 27. \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} \mathbb{F}(C_{u}(S_{u}X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}),C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u=v \qquad \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}S_{v}X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}S_{u}^{0},C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 32. \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}S_{u}^{0},C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 27. \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}S_{u}^{0},C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 27. \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}S_{u}^{0},C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 27. \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}S_{u}^{0},C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 27. \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u=v \qquad 18. \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}S_{u}^{0},C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 32. \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u=v \qquad 18. \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}S_{u}^{0},C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u\neq v \qquad 32. \end{cases} \\ & = \begin{cases} \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0})) \qquad u=v \qquad 18. \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 18. \end{cases} \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 18. \end{cases} \\ & \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 28. \end{cases} \\ & \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 29. \end{cases} \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 29. \end{cases} \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 29. \end{cases} \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 29. \end{cases} \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 29. \end{cases} \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 29. \end{cases} \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 29. \end{cases} \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 29. \end{cases} \\ \mathbb{F}(C_{u}X,C_{u}(Y \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}^{0}) \qquad u=v \qquad 29.$$

Now let

Hence
$$G(S_{\mathbf{v}}N) = F(C_{\mathbf{u}}X \stackrel{!}{=} S_{\mathbf{v}}N), C_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \stackrel{!}{=} S_{\mathbf{v}}N))$$

$$= F(C_{\mathbf{u}}P_{\mathbf{v}}(X \stackrel{!}{=} N), C_{\mathbf{u}}P_{\mathbf{v}}(Y \stackrel{!}{=} N)) \qquad 18.$$

$$= \begin{cases} F(C_{\mathbf{u}}((X \stackrel{!}{=} N) \stackrel{!}{=} S_{\mathbf{u}}0), C_{\mathbf{u}}((Y \stackrel{!}{=} N) \stackrel{!}{=} S_{\mathbf{u}}0) & u=\mathbf{v} & 17.18. \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} F(C_{\mathbf{u}}(X \stackrel{!}{=} N), C_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \stackrel{!}{=} N)) & u\neq\mathbf{v} & 40. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} F(C_{\mathbf{u}}(X \stackrel{!}{=} N), C_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \stackrel{!}{=} N)) & u=\mathbf{v} & (b) \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} F(C_{\mathbf{u}}(X \stackrel{!}{=} N), C_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \stackrel{!}{=} N)) & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= G(N)$$

$$G(N) = G(0) \qquad 57.$$

$$F(C_{\mathbf{u}}(X \stackrel{!}{=} N), C_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \stackrel{!}{=} N)) = F(C_{\mathbf{u}}(X \stackrel{!}{=} 0), C_{\mathbf{u}}(Y \stackrel{!}{=} 0))$$

In the particular instance where N = X we have:-

 $= F(C_{ij}X,C_{ij}Y)$

$$F(C_{\mathbf{u}}X,C_{\mathbf{u}}Y) = F(C_{\mathbf{u}}(X - X),C_{\mathbf{u}}(Y - C))$$

$$= F(C_{\mathbf{u}}O,C_{\mathbf{u}}(Y - X))$$

$$= F(O,C_{\mathbf{u}}(Y - X))$$

$$= 0$$
Premises

59.
$$C_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - A) = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ 0 & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

Proof
$$C_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - A) = C_{\mathbf{v}} S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - C_{\mathbf{v}} A$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - C_{\mathbf{u}} A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} & 27. \\ 0 - A & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}} \circ - A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} & 42. \\ 0 & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} & 19. \end{cases}$$

$$A.S_u^0 = C_u^A$$

Proof
$$A.S_u^0 = A.0 + C_u^A$$
 43.
 $= 0 + C_u^A$ 43.
 $= C_u^A$ 13.

61.
$$S_{u} \circ - S_{v} A = \begin{cases} S_{u} \circ - A \\ 0 \end{cases} \qquad u \neq v$$

$$u \neq v$$

Proof
$$S_{u}^{0} - S_{v}^{A} = S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} S_{v}^{A}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} & u \neq v & 27. \\ S_{u}^{0} - S_{u}^{0} C_{u}^{0} & u = v & 27. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}^{0} - A & u \neq v & 42. \\ 0 - C_{u}^{0} & u = v & 21. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}^{0} - A & u \neq v & 42. \\ 0 - C_{u}^{0} & u = v & 19. \end{cases}$$

62.
$$A.(S_u^0 - A) = 0$$

Proof
$$L(0) = 0 \cdot (S_u 0 - 0)$$

$$= 0$$

$$R(0) = 0$$

$$L(S_v A) = S_v A \cdot (S_u 0 - S_v A)$$

u≠v

59.

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u=v \\ L(A) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{v}}A) = 0$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u=v \\ 0 & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u=v \\ R(A) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$L(A) = R(A)$$

$$26$$

63. Rule of inference

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$\frac{(S_u^0 - F(X)) \cdot F(S_v^X) = 0}{F(X) = 0}$$

Proof

Consider first

(a)
$$(S_u \circ - F(X)) \cdot (S_u \circ - F(S_v X)) = S_u \circ - F(X)$$

Proof

$$(S_{u} \circ - F(X)) \cdot (S_{u} \circ - F(S_{v} X)) = (S_{u} \circ - F(X)) \cdot S_{u} \circ - (S_{u} \circ - F(X)) \cdot F(S_{v} X)$$

$$= (S_{u} \circ - F(X)) \cdot S_{u} \circ - 0 \qquad \text{Premises}$$

$$= (S_{u} \circ - F(X)) \cdot S_{u} \circ - 18.$$

$$= C_{u} (S_{u} \circ - F(X)) \qquad 60.$$

$$= S_{u} \circ - F(X) \text{ for (a)} \qquad 59.$$

Now define G(X) by

$$G(0) = S_u 0$$

$$G(S_v X) = G(X) \cdot (S_u 0 - F(X))$$

Let
$$H(X) = G(S_vX)$$

 $H(O) = G(S_vO)$
 $= G(O) \cdot (S_uO - F(O))$ Defn.
 $= G(O) \cdot (S_uO - O)$ Premises
 $= S_uO \cdot S_uO$ 18.
 $= C_uS_uO$ 60.
 $= S_uO$ 27.
 $= G(O)$ Defn.
 $H(S_wX) = G(S_vS_wX)$ Defn.
 $= G(X) \cdot (S_uO - F(X)) \cdot (S_uO - F(S_wX))$ Defn.
 $= G(X) \cdot (S_uO - F(X)) \cdot (S_uO - F(S_wX))$ Defn.
 $= G(S_wX) \cdot (S_uO - F(X)) \cdot (S_uO - F(S_wX))$ Defn.
 $= G(S_wX) \cdot (S_uO - F(X)) \cdot (S_uO - F(S_wX))$ Defn.
 $= G(S_vX) \cdot (S_uO - F(X)) \cdot (S_vO - F(S_vX))$ Defn.
 $= G(S_vX) \cdot (S_vO - F(X)) \cdot (S_vO - F(X)) \cdot (S_vO - F(X))$ Defn.
 $= S_vO \cdot (S_vO - F(X)) \cdot (S_vO - F(X)) \cdot (S_vO - F(X)) \cdot (S_vO - F(X)) \cdot (S_vO - F(X))$ 59.
 $= S_vO \cdot F(X) \cdot (S_vO - F(X)) \cdot (S_vO - F$

As no specification has been made on u we can therefore say

$$F(X) = 0 by 53.$$

64. Definition (explicit)

$$(X)^2 = X^2 = X \cdot X$$

65. Definition of Rt(X)

$$Rt(0) = 0$$

$$Rt(S_uX) = Rt(X) + (S_uO - ((S_uRt(X))^2 - S_uX)) \quad u=1,...,n$$

66.
$$(S_{ij}O - ((S_{ij}(A + (S_{ij}O - B)))^2 - S_{ij}S_{ij}C)) = (S_{ij}O - ((S_{ij}A)^2 - S_{ij}C)) \quad u \neq v$$

Proof

$$(s_{u}0 - ((s_{u}(A + (s_{v}0 - B)))^{2} - s_{u}s_{v}C)) = (s_{u}0 - c_{u}((s_{u}(A + (s_{v}0 - B)))^{2} - s_{u}s_{v}C)) + 2.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - (c_{u}(s_{u}(A + (s_{v}0 - B)))^{2} - c_{u}s_{u}s_{v}C)) + 32.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - ((c_{u}s_{u}(A + (s_{v}0 - B)))^{2} - s_{u}c_{u}s_{v}C)) + 47.27.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - ((s_{u}(c_{u}A + c_{u}(s_{v}0 - B)))^{2} - s_{u}c_{u}C)) + 30.27.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - ((s_{u}(c_{u}A + 0))^{2} - c_{u}s_{u}C)) + 59.27.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - ((s_{u}c_{u}A)^{2} - c_{u}s_{u}C)) + 7.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - (c_{u}(s_{u}A)^{2} - c_{u}s_{u}C)) + 27.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - (c_{u}(s_{u}A)^{2} - c_{u}s_{u}C)) + 47.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - c_{u}((s_{u}A)^{2} - s_{u}C)) + 32.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - ((s_{u}A)^{2} - s_{u}C)) + 32.$$

$$= (s_{u}0 - ((s_{u}A)^{2} - s_{u}C)) + 42.$$

67. The commutativity condition for R(X)

If u≠v then

$$\begin{split} \mathtt{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{X},\mathtt{B}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathtt{X},\mathtt{Z})) &= \mathtt{Z} + (\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{0} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{Z})^2 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{X})) + \\ & (\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{0} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathtt{Z} + (\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{0} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{Z})^2 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{X}))))^2 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{X})) \ \ \mathsf{Defn.} \\ &= \mathtt{Z} + (\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{0} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathtt{Z} + (\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{0} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{Z})^2 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{X}))))^2 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{X})) + 66. \\ & (\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{0} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{Z})^2 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{X})) + \\ & (\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{0} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{Z})^2 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{X})) + \\ & (\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{0} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{Z})^2 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{X})))^2 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{X})) \ \ \ \mathsf{15.} \\ &= \mathtt{B}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathtt{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathtt{X},\mathtt{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathtt{Y},\mathtt{Z})) \quad \text{for } \mathtt{u} \neq \mathtt{v} \end{split} \ \ \ \ \ \mathsf{Defn.} \end{split}$$

If u=v then

$$B_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{v}}X,B_{\mathbf{v}}(X,Z)) = B_{\mathbf{v}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}X,B_{\mathbf{u}}(X,Z))$$
 u=v

Hence

$$\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbf{X},\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Z})) = \mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{v}}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{X},\mathbf{B}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{X},\mathbf{Z})) \quad \text{all u,v.}$$

68.
$$(S_u^0 - A).(S_u^0 - (S_u^0 - A)) = 0$$

Proof
$$L(0) =$$

$$L(0) = (S_u^0 - 0) \cdot (S_u^0 - (S_u^0 - 0))$$

$$= S_u^0 \cdot (S_u^0 - S_u^0)$$

$$= S_u^0 \cdot 0$$
22.

43.

$$R(0) = 0$$

= 0

$$L(S_{v}A) = (S_{u}0 - S_{v}A) \cdot (S_{u}0 - (S_{u}0 - S_{v}A))$$

$$= \begin{cases} (0 - A) \cdot (S_{u}0 - (0 - A)) & u = v \\ (S_{u}0 - A) \cdot (S_{u}0 - (S_{u}0 - A)) & u \neq v \end{cases} \qquad 61.$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 \cdot (S_{u}0 - 0) & u = v \\ L(A) & u \neq v \end{cases} \qquad 19.$$

$$R(S_{\mathbf{v}}A) = 0$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u=\mathbf{v} \\ 0 & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u=\mathbf{v} \\ R(A) & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$L(A) = R(A)$$

$$26.$$

69.
$$(S_u^0 - (S_u^A - B)) \cdot (S_u^0 - (B - A)) = 0$$

Proof
$$L(A,0) = (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{A} - 0)) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (0 - A))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - S_{u}^{A}) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - 0)$$

$$= 0.S_{u}^{0}$$

$$= 0$$

$$L(0,B) = (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - B)) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (B - 0))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - B)) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - B)$$

$$= 0$$

$$= 0$$

$$= 0$$

$$= 0$$

$$= 0$$

$$= 0$$

$$= 0$$

$$\begin{split} L(C_{\underline{u}}S_{\underline{u}}A, C_{\underline{u}}S_{\underline{u}}B) &= (S_{\underline{u}}O - (S_{\underline{u}}C_{\underline{u}}S_{\underline{u}}A - C_{\underline{u}}S_{\underline{u}}B) \cdot (S_{\underline{u}}O - (C_{\underline{u}}S_{\underline{u}}B - C_{\underline{u}}S_{\underline{u}}A)) \\ &= (S_{\underline{u}}O - (S_{\underline{u}}S_{\underline{u}}C_{\underline{u}}A - S_{\underline{u}}C_{\underline{u}}B) \cdot (S_{\underline{u}}O - (S_{\underline{u}}C_{\underline{u}}B - S_{\underline{u}}C_{\underline{u}}A)) \\ &= (S_{\underline{u}}O - (S_{\underline{u}}C_{\underline{u}}A - C_{\underline{u}}B) \cdot (S_{\underline{u}}O - (C_{\underline{u}}B - C_{\underline{u}}A)) \\ &= L(C_{\underline{u}}A, C_{\underline{u}}B) \end{split}$$

$$L(C_{\mathbf{u}}A, C_{\mathbf{u}}B) = 0 58.$$

$$(S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{A} - B)) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (B - A)) = (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}(S_{u}^{A} - B)) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}(B - A))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0}))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0}))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0}))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0}))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0}))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0}))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0}))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0}))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - (C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0}))$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0} - C_{u}^{0})$$

= 0

From above.

70. Rule of inference

 $A \cdot B = A \cdot C$

 $A \cdot |B \cdot C| = 0$

Proof A.|B,C| = A.((B
$$\stackrel{.}{-}$$
 C) + (C $\stackrel{.}{-}$ B)) 54.
= A.(B $\stackrel{.}{-}$ C) + A.(C $\stackrel{.}{-}$ B) 50.
= (A.B $\stackrel{.}{-}$ A.C) + (A.C $\stackrel{.}{-}$ A.B) 53.
= 0 + 0 Premises. 56.

It is now necessary to quote the Key Equation. This is proved formally using primitive recursion under the same set of axioms in [4]. Thus

71. Key Equation

$$A + (B + A) = B + (A - B)$$

72.
$$(S_u \circ - X).F(C_u(X + Y)) = (S_u \circ - X).F(C_uY)$$

Proof
$$L(0,Y) = (S_{u} \circ - \circ) \cdot F(C_{u}(0 + Y))$$

$$= S_{u} \circ \cdot F(C_{u}Y)$$

$$= C_{u}F(C_{u}Y)$$

$$= C_{u}F(C_{u}Y)$$

$$= S_{u} \circ \cdot F(C_{u}Y)$$

$$= S_{u} \circ \cdot F(C_{u}Y)$$

$$= C_{u}F(C_{u}Y)$$

$$= C_{u}F(C_{u}Y)$$

$$= C_{u}F(C_{u}Y)$$

$$= (S_{u} \circ - S_{v}X) \cdot F(C_{u}(S_{v}X + Y))$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 \cdot F(C_{u}(S_{v}X + Y) & u=v \\ (S_{u} \circ - X) \cdot F(C_{u}S_{v}(X + Y)) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 \cdot F(C_{u}(S_{v}X + Y) & u=v \\ (S_{u} \circ - X) \cdot F(C_{u}S_{v}(X + Y)) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 \cdot F(C_{u}(S_{v}X + Y) & u=v \\ (S_{u} \circ - X) \cdot F(C_{u}S_{v}(X + Y)) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 \cdot F(C_{u}(S_{v}X + Y) & u=v \\ (S_{u} \circ - X) \cdot F(C_{u}S_{v}(X + Y)) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 \cdot F(C_{u}(S_{v}X + Y) & u=v \\ (S_{u} \circ - X) \cdot F(C_{u}S_{v}(X + Y)) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

61.

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u = v \\ (S_{u} \circ - X) \cdot F(C_{u}(X + Y)) & u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u = v \\ L(X,Y) & u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{v} X,Y) = (S_{u} \circ - S_{v} X) \cdot F(C_{u} Y)$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 \cdot F(C_{u} Y) & u = v \\ (S_{u} \circ - X) \cdot F(C_{u} Y) & u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u = v \\ R(X,Y) & u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$L(X,Y) = R(X,Y)$$

$$26.$$

In fact the equation

$$(s_u \circ \cdot x) \cdot F(c_u x + y) = (s_u \circ \cdot x) \cdot F(y)$$

is proved by the above schema, though the equation proved is sufficient for subsequent proofs.

73. Rule of inference

$$\frac{|A,B| = 0}{A = B}$$

Proof
$$|A,B| = 0$$
 Premises.
 $(A - B) + (B - A) = 0$ 54.
 $A - B = 0$... (1) 55.
 $B - A = 0$... (2) 55.
 $A = A + 0$ 7.
 $= A + (B - A)$ From above (2) $= B + (A - B)$ Key Equation $= B + 0$ From above (1) $= B + 0$ From above (1) $= B + 0$ From above (1)

74. Rule of inference

$$F(0,Y) = G(0,Y)$$

$$F(X,0) = G(X,0)$$

$$F(C_uS_uX,C_uS_uY) = F(C_uX,C_uY) \qquad \text{for one value of } u$$

$$G(C_uS_uX,C_uS_uY) = G(C_uX,C_uY) \qquad \text{for the same value of } u.$$

$$F(C_uX,C_uY) = G(C_uX,C_uY) \qquad \text{for that value of } u.$$

Let
$$H(X,Y) = |F(X,Y),G(X,Y)|$$

Then $H(0,Y) = |F(0,Y),G(0,Y)|$
 $= 0$ Premises 56. 7.
 $H(X,0) = |F(X,0),G(X,0)|$
 $= 0$ Premises 56. 7.
 $H(C_uS_vX,C_uS_vY) = |F(C_uS_vX,C_uS_vY),G(C_uS_vX,C_uS_vY)|$
 $= |F(C_uX,C_uY),G(C_uX,C_uY)|$ $u=v$ Premises $|F(C_uX,C_uY),G(C_uX,C_uY)|$ $u\neq v$ 27.
 $= H(C_uX,C_uY)$ $= 0$ 58.
 $F(C_uX,C_uY) = G(C_uX,C_uY)$ 73.

75.
$$|s_u x, s_u y| = |x, y|$$

Proof
$$|S_{u}X,S_{u}Y| = (S_{u}X - S_{u}Y) + (S_{u}Y - S_{u}X)$$
 54.

$$= (X - Y) + (Y - X)$$
 21.

76.
$$|c_{u}x, c_{u}y| = c_{u}|x,y|$$

Proof
$$|c_{u}x, c_{u}y| = (c_{u}x - c_{u}y) + (c_{u}y - c_{u}x)$$
 54.

$$= c_{u}(x - y) + c_{u}(y - x)$$
 32.

$$= c_{u}((x - y) + (y - x))$$
 30.

$$= c_{u}|x,y|$$
 54.

77.
$$|X,Y| = |Y,X|$$

Proof
$$|X,Y| = (X - Y) + (Y - X)$$
 54.
$$= (Y - X) + (X - Y)$$
 15.
$$= |Y,X|$$
 54.

78.
$$|0,Y| = |Y,0| = Y$$

Proof
$$|0,Y| = |Y,0|$$
 77.
 $= (Y - 0) + (0 - Y)$ 54.
 $= Y + 0$ 18.19.
 $= Y$ 7.

79.
$$(s_u \circ - |x,y|) \cdot (s_u \circ - (x - y)) = (s_u \circ - |x,y|)$$

Proof
$$L(0,Y) = (s_u^0 - |0,Y|) \cdot (s_u^0 - (0 - Y))$$

 $= (s_u^0 - Y) \cdot (s_u^0 - 0)$ 81.19.
 $= (s_u^0 - Y) \cdot s_u^0$ 18.
 $= c_u(s_u^0 - Y)$ 60.
 $= (s_u^0 - Y)$ 59.

59.

$$R(0,Y) = (S_{u}0 - |0,Y|)$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - Y) \qquad 78.$$

$$L(X,0) = (S_{u}0 - |X,0|).(S_{u}0 - (X - 0))$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - X).(S_{u}0 - X) \qquad 78.18.$$

$$= S_{u}0.(S_{u}0 - X) - X.(S_{u}0 - X) \qquad 53.46.$$

$$= C_{u}(S_{u}0 - X) - 0 \qquad 60.62.$$

$$= C_{u}(S_{u}0 - X) \qquad 18.$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - X) \qquad 59.$$

$$R(X,0) = (S_{u}0 - |X,0|)$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |X,0|)$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |X,0|)$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |X,0|)$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |X,0|).(S_{u}0 - (C_{u}S_{u}X - C_{u}S_{u}Y))$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |C_{u}S_{u}X, C_{u}S_{u}Y|).(S_{u}0 - (C_{u}S_{u}X - C_{u}S_{u}Y))$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |C_{u}X, C_{u}Y|).(S_{u}0 - (C_{u}X - C_{u}Y)) \qquad 75.21.$$

$$= L(C_{u}X, C_{u}Y)$$

$$R(C_{u}S_{u}X, C_{u}S_{u}Y) = (S_{u}0 - |C_{u}S_{u}X, C_{u}S_{u}Y|) \qquad 27.$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |C_{u}S_{u}X, C_{u}S_{u}Y|) \qquad 27.$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |C_{u}S_{u}X, C_{u}S_{u}Y|) \qquad 27.$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |C_{u}S_{u}X, C_{u}S_{u}Y|) \qquad 75.$$

$$= (S_{u}0 - |C_{u}X, C_{u}Y|) \qquad 75.$$

$$= R(C_{u}X, C_{u}Y) \qquad 75.$$

$$= R(C_{u}X, C_{u}Y) \qquad 75.$$

Hence

$$(s_{u} \circ - | c_{u} x, c_{u} y |) \cdot (s_{u} \circ - (c_{u} x - c_{u} y)) = (s_{u} \circ - | c_{u} x, c_{u} y |)$$

$$(s_{u} \circ - c_{u} | x, y |) \cdot (s_{u} \circ - c_{u} (x - y)) = (s_{u} \circ - c_{u} | x, y |)$$

$$(s_{u} \circ - | x, y |) \cdot (s_{u} \circ - (x - y)) = (s_{u} \circ - | x, y |)$$

$$as required. 42.$$

80.
$$(s_u^0 - |x,y|) \cdot (s_u^0 - F(c_u^x)) \cdot F(c_u^y) = 0$$

Proof
$$(S_u \circ - X) \cdot F(C_u(X + Y)) = (S_u \circ - X) \cdot F(C_u Y)$$
 72.

Put X - Y for X, and we have

$$(s_u \circ - (x - Y)), F(c_u((x - Y) + Y)) = (s_u \circ - (x - Y)), F(c_u Y).$$

Multiply both sides of the equation by $(S_{u}^{0} - |X,Y|)$ and therefore

$$(s_u \circ - |x,y|) \cdot F(c_u((x - y) + y)) = (s_u \circ - |x,y|) \cdot F(c_u y)$$
 70.79

Similarly one can prove the equation

$$(S_{ij} \circ - |Y,X|) \cdot F(C_{ij} ((Y - X) + X)) = (S_{ij} \circ - |Y,X|) \cdot F(C_{ij}X)$$

Hence from the above two equations, the Key Equation and 77., we have

$$(s_u \circ - |x,y|) \cdot F(c_u y) = (s_u \circ - |x,y|) \cdot F(c_u x)$$
.

Multiply both sides of the equation by $(S_u^0 - F(C_u^X))$; the right-hand side then becomes zero by 62. and therefore we have

$$(S_u^0 \circ |X,Y|).(S_u^0 \circ F(C_u^X)).F(C_u^Y) = 0$$
 as required.

81.
$$(S_u^0 - (S_u^0 - A)) + (S_u^0 - A) = S_u^0$$

Proof
$$L(0) = (S_u^0 - (S_u^0 - 0)) + (S_u^0 - 0)$$

$$= (S_u^0 - S_u^0) + S_u^0$$

$$= 0 + S_u^0$$

$$= S_u^0$$
13.

$$R(0) = S_{11}0$$

$$L(S_{v}A) = (S_{v}O - (S_{v}O - S_{v}A)) + (S_{v}O - S_{v}A)$$

$$= \begin{cases} (S_{u}^{0} - 0) + 0 & u = v & 61. \\ (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - A)) + (S_{u}^{0} - A) & u \neq v & 61. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}^{0} + 0 & u = v & 18. \\ L(A) & u \neq v & \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}^{0} & u = v & 7. \\ L(A) & u \neq v & \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{v}^{A}) = S_{u}^{0} & u = v & \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}^{0} & u = v & \\ S_{u}^{0} & u \neq v & \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}^{0} & u = v & \\ S_{u}^{0} & u \neq v & \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}^{0} & u = v & \\ S_{u}^{0} & u \neq v & \end{cases}$$

$$L(A) = R(A) & u \neq v & \end{cases}$$

$$L(A) = R(A)$$

82.
$$(S_u \circ - (S_u A - B)) + (S_u \circ - |A,B|) = (S_u \circ - (A - B))$$

Proof
$$L(A,0) = (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{A} - 0)) + (S_{u}^{0} - |A,0|)$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - S_{u}^{A}) + (S_{u}^{0} - A) \qquad 18.78.$$

$$= 0 + (S_{u}^{0} - A) \qquad 61.$$

$$= S_{u}^{0} - A \qquad 13.$$

$$R(A,0) = (S_{u}^{0} - (A - 0))$$

$$= S_{u}^{0} - A \qquad 18.$$

$$L(0,B) = (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - B) + (S_{u}^{0} - |0,B|)$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0} - B)) + (S_{u}^{0} - B) \qquad 61.$$

$$= S_{u}^{0} \qquad 81.$$

$$R(O,B) = (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} B))$$

$$= (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} O) \qquad 19.$$

$$= S_{u}O \qquad 18.$$

$$L(C_{u}S_{u}A,C_{u}S_{u}B) = (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (S_{u}C_{u}S_{u}A \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}S_{u}B)) + (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} |C_{u}S_{u}A,C_{u}S_{u}B|)$$

$$= (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (S_{u}S_{u}C_{u}A \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}C_{u}B)) + (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} |S_{u}C_{u}A,S_{u}C_{u}B|) \qquad 27.$$

$$= (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (S_{u}C_{u}A \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}B)) + (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} |C_{u}A,C_{u}B|) \qquad 21.75.$$

$$= L(C_{u}A,C_{u}B)$$

$$R(C_{u}S_{u}A,C_{u}S_{u}B) = (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (C_{u}S_{u}A \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}S_{u}B))$$

$$= (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (S_{u}C_{u}A \stackrel{\cdot}{-} S_{u}C_{u}B)) \qquad 27.$$

$$= (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (C_{u}A \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}B)) \qquad 27.$$

$$= (S_{u}O \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (C_{u}A \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C_{u}B)) \qquad 21.$$

$$= R(C_{u}A,C_{u}B) \qquad 74.$$

Hence

$$(s_u^0 - (s_u^A - B)) \cdot c = 0$$

 $(s_u^0 - |A,B|) \cdot c = 0$
 $(s_u^0 - (A - B)) \cdot c = 0$

Proof
$$(S_u^0 - (A - B)) \cdot C = ((S_u^0 - (S_u^A - B)) + (S_u^0 - |A, B|)) \cdot C$$
 82.

$$= (S_u^0 - (S_u^A - B)) \cdot C + (S_u^0 - |A, B|) \cdot C$$
 50.46.

$$= 0 + 0$$
 Premises

$$= 0$$
 7.

84.
$$A + (S_u^0 - A) = S_u^0 + P_u^A$$

$$L(0) = 0 + (S_u^0 - 0)$$

$$= S_u^0$$
13.18.

$$R(0) = S_u^0 + P_u^0$$

$$= S_u^0 + 0$$
17.

$$= S_{u}^{0}$$
 7.

$$L(S_{v}A) = S_{v}A + (S_{u}O - S_{v}A)$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}A + O & u=v & 61. \\ S_{v}A + (S_{u}O - A) & u\neq v & 61. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}A & u=v & 7. \\ S_{v}(A + (S_{u}O - A)) & u\neq v & 14. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}A & u=v & 14. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}A & u=v & u\neq v & 14. \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{v}A) = S_{u}O + P_{u}S_{v}A$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}O + A & u=v & 17. \\ S_{u}O + S_{v}P_{u}A & u\neq v & 17. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{u}(O + A) & u=v & 14. \\ S_{v}(S_{u}O + P_{u}A) & u\neq v & 7. \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}} A & \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{v} \\ S_{\mathbf{v}} R(A) & \mathbf{u} \neq \mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$L(A) = R(A)$$

$$C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot A = 0$$

$$(S_{\mathbf{u}}O - A) \cdot C = 0$$

$$C_{\mathbf{u}}B \cdot C = 0$$

Premises

42.

Proof
$$0 = (S_u \circ - A) \cdot C$$
 Proof $= (S_u \circ - C_u A) \cdot C$ 42.
 $= (S_u \circ - C_u A) \cdot C \cdot B$ 44.73.
 $= S_u \circ \cdot C \cdot B - C_u A \cdot C \cdot B$ 53.46.
 $= C_u (C \cdot B) - C \cdot C_u A \cdot B$ 60.46.51.
 $= C \cdot C_u B - C \cdot C_u B \cdot A$ 47.48.49.

 $= C_u B.C \div C.0$ 46.Premises. $= C_u B \cdot C - 0$ 27.

 $= C_{11}B.C.$ 18.

$$\frac{(A - B) \cdot C = 0}{(A - S_u B) \cdot C = 0}$$

Proof
$$(A - S_u^B) \cdot C = (A - (B + S_u^O)) \cdot C$$
 7.
= $((A - B) - S_u^O) \cdot C$ 20.
= $(A - B) \cdot C - S_u^O \cdot C$ 53.46.
= $0 - S_u^O \cdot C$ Premises
= 0

87.
$$(s_u^0 - A)(s_u^0 - A) = s_u^0 - A$$

Proof
$$(S_u^0 - A) \cdot (S_u^0 - A) = (S_u^0 - A) \cdot S_u^0 - (S_u^0 - A) \cdot A$$
 53.46.

$$= C_u(S_u^0 - A) - 0$$
 62.63.

$$= C_u(S_u^0 - A)$$
 18.

$$= S_u^0 - A$$
 59.

88.
$$Rt(C_uX) = C_uRt(X)$$

Proof $L(0) = Rt(C_u^0)$

$$= Rt(0) 27.$$

$$R(0) = C_{u}Rt(0)$$

$$= C_{u}0$$
65.

$$L(S_{\mathbf{v}}X) = Rt(C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{v}}X)$$

$$= \begin{cases} Rt(S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}X) & u=\mathbf{v} \\ Rt(C_{\mathbf{u}}X) & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases} 27.$$

$$= \begin{cases} Rt(C_{\mathbf{u}}X) + (S_{\mathbf{u}}O - ((S_{\mathbf{u}}Rt(C_{\mathbf{u}}X))^2 - S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}X)) & u=v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} L(X) & u \neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \{L(X) + (S_u^0 - C_u^{(S_u^R t(C_u^X))^2} - C_u^S_u^X)\} \quad u=v$$

$$\{L(X) + (S_u^0 - C_u^{(S_u^R t(C_u^X))^2} - C_u^S_u^X)\} \quad u\neq v$$

$$= \{L(X) + (S_u^0 - C_u^{(S_u^R t(C_u^X))^2} - C_u^S_u^X)\} \quad u=v$$

$$= \left\{ L(X) + \left(S_u^0 - \left(C_u \left(S_u^R t \left(C_u^X \right) \right)^2 - C_u^C S_u^X \right) \right) u = v \right\}$$

$$\left\{ L(X) + \left(S_u^0 - \left(C_u \left(S_u^R t \left(C_u^X \right) \right)^2 - C_u^C S_u^X \right) \right) u = v \right\}$$

$$12.$$

$$= \begin{cases} L(X) + (S_u \circ - (C_u(S_uRt(C_uX))^2 - C_uS_uX)) & u=v \\ L(X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$
 28.

$$= \begin{cases} L(X) + (S_u^0 - C_u^0((S_u^0Rt(C_u^0X))^2 - S_u^0X)) & u=v \end{cases} 32.$$

$$L(X) \qquad u \neq v$$

6.

$$\begin{split} &\mathbb{R}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbb{X}) = \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbb{X}) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}) + (\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbb{O} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}))^{2} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbb{X})) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}) + \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbb{O} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}))^{2} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{v}}\mathbb{X})) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}) + (\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{O} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}((\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}))^{2} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{X})) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}))^{2} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{X})) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}))^{2} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{X})) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}))^{2} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{X})) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{R}\mathsf{t}(\mathbb{X}))^{2} \stackrel{\cdot}{-} \mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{X})) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}) \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}} \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}} \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}} \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}} \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}} \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}} \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}} \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}} \\ &= \mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbb{S}_{\mathbf{u}} \\$$

89.
$$C_u Rt(S_v X) = C_u Rt(X)$$
 $u \neq v$

Proof
$$C_uRt(S_vX) = Rt(C_uS_vX)$$
 88.
$$= Rt(C_uX) \qquad u \neq v \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_uRt(X) \qquad 88.$$

90.
$$(S_u^0 - |A,B|) = (S_u^0 - (A - B)) - (B - A)$$

L(X) = R(X)

Proof
$$(S_u^0 - |A,B|) = (S_u^0 - ((A - B) + (B - A)))$$

= $(S_u^0 - (A - B)) - (B - A)$ 20.

91. Rule of inference

$$A.C.D = 0$$

$$(B -A).C = 0$$

$$B.C.D = 0$$

Proof

92. Rule of inference

$$\frac{C_{\mathbf{u}}A = 0}{A = 0}$$
 u=1,...,n

Proof

$$A = C_1 A + C_2 A + \dots + C_n A$$
 33.
= 0 + 0 + \dots + 0 Premises
= 0

93. Rule of inference

$$A \cdot B = 0$$

$$A \cdot (S_u^0 - B) = 0$$

$$A = 0$$
all u OR if one value u then $C_u^A = 0$

Proof

$$0 = A \cdot (S_u^0 - B)$$
 Premises
$$= A \cdot S_u^0 - A \cdot B$$
 53.
$$= C_u^A - 0$$
 Premises
$$= C_u^A \text{ for that value of } u \cdot 18.$$

$$A = 0 \text{ if for all } u \cdot 92.$$

94.
$$C_u(B - A)(S_uA - B) = 0$$

$$L(A,0) = C_u(0 - A)(S_uA - 0)$$

= $C_u0.S_uA$

$$L(0,B) = C_{11}(B \div 0) \cdot (S_{11}0 \div B)$$

$$= C_u^0$$

18.

19.18.

27.

44.

$$L(C_uS_uA,C_uS_uB) = C_u(C_uS_uB - C_uS_uA) \cdot (S_uC_uS_uA - C_uS_uB)$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}B - S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A) \cdot (S_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A - S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}B) \qquad 27.$$

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}A) \cdot (S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A - C_{\mathbf{u}}B)$$
 21.

$$= L(C_{u}A, C_{u}B)$$

$$L(C_{\mathbf{u}}A,C_{\mathbf{u}}B) = 0 58.$$

$$C_{u}(B - A).(S_{u}A - B) = C_{u}C_{u}(B - A).(S_{u}A - B)$$
 28.

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}A) \cdot (C_{\mathbf{u}}S_{\mathbf{u}}A - C_{\mathbf{u}}B)$$
 47.32.

$$= C_{\mathbf{u}}(C_{\mathbf{u}}B - C_{\mathbf{u}}A) \cdot (S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}A - C_{\mathbf{u}}B)$$
 27.

=
$$L(C_{ij}A,C_{ij}B)$$

We now have sufficient results to prove the two conditions

$$S_u X - (S_u Rt(X))^2 = 0$$

$$(Rt(X))^2 - X = 0$$

which will lead to the result

$$Rt(X^2) = X$$
.

From here on Rt(X) will be referred to as RX.

95.
$$S_{ij}X - (S_{ij}RX)^2 = 0$$

Proof In this proof we shall dispense with the notation for small steps and only use the notation for major formulae. A labelling method with the number in parenthesis will be used for statements for use later in the proof.

Definition of RX

$$RO = O$$

$$RS_{u}X = RX + (S_{u}O - ((S_{u}RX)^{2} - S_{u}X)) \qquad u=1,...,n$$

$$(S_{u}O - (S_{u}S_{u}X - (S_{u}RX)^{2})) \cdot RS_{u}X = (S_{u}O - (S_{u}S_{u}X - (S_{u}RX)^{2})) \cdot RX + (S_{u}O - ((S_{u}RX)^{2})) \cdot (S_{u}O - ((S_{u}RX)^{2} - S_{u}X))$$

the last term being equal to zero from 69. with $A = S_u X$, $B = (S_u RX)^2$.

$$(s_u \circ - (s_u s_u x - (s_u Rx)^2)) \cdot Rs_u x = (s_u \circ - (s_u s_u x - (s_u Rx)^2)) \cdot Rx.$$

By 70. we have

$$(S_u^0 - (S_u^S_u^X - (S_u^RX)^2)) \cdot |RS_u^X, RX| = 0$$
 $u=1,...,n$ (1)

Now by 72. we have

$$(S_u^0 - | RX, RS_u^X |) \cdot (S_u^0 - (S_u^S_u^X - (S_u^RC_u^X)^2)) \cdot (S_u^S_u^X - (S_u^RS_u^C_u^X)^2) = 0$$

and obviously

$$(s_u^0 - |RX,RS_u^X|) \cdot (s_u^0 - (s_u^S_u^X - (s_u^S_u^X))) \cdot (s_u^S_u^X - (s_u^S_u^X)) = 0$$
 (2)

Multiplying (1) by $(S_uS_uX - (S_uRS_uX)^2)$ and using 93. we find

$$(s_u \circ - (s_u s_u x - (s_u RX)^2)) \cdot (s_u s_u x - (s_u Rs_u X)^2) = 0$$
 (3)

Multiply the defining equation for RS_uX by $(S_u^0 - |(S_u^RX)^2, S_u^X|)$ and using 71. we find

$$(s_u \circ - | (s_u RX)^2, s_u X |).Rs_u X = (s_u \circ - | (s_u RX)^2, s_u X |).RX + (s_u \circ - | (s_u RX)^2, s_u X |)$$

Hence

$$(s_u \circ - | (s_u RX)^2, s_u X |).Rs_u X = (s_u \circ - | (s_u RX)^2, s_u X |).s_u RX$$

and so

$$(S_u^0 - |(S_u^{XX})^2, S_u^X|) \cdot |RS_u^X, S_u^X| = 0$$
 (4)

by 72.

$$(s_u \circ - | Rs_u x, s_u Rx |) \cdot (s_u \circ - | (s_u Rx)^2, s_u x |) \cdot | (Rs_u x)^2, s_u x | = 0$$
 (5)

and so, multiplying (4) by $|(RS_uX)^2, S_uX|$, adding (5), taking the common factor out, then using 93. we have

$$(s_u^0 - |(s_u^x)^2, s_u^x|) \cdot |(s_u^x)^2, s_u^x| = 0$$
 (6)

It follows therefore by 55. that

$$(S_u^0 - |(S_u^X)^2, S_u^X|) \cdot (S_u^X - (RS_u^X)^2) = 0$$
.

Hence

$$(S_{u}O - | (S_{u}RX)^{2}, S_{u}X |) \cdot (S_{u}S_{u}X - S_{u}(RS_{u}X)^{2}) = 0$$

$$(S_{u}O - | (S_{u}RX)^{2}, S_{u}X |) \cdot (S_{u}S_{u}X - S_{u}(RS_{u}X)^{2}) - (S_{u}O - | (S_{u}RX)^{2}, S_{u}X |) \cdot (C_{u}RS_{u}X + C_{u}RS_{u}X) = 0$$

$$(S_u^0 - |(S_u^RX)^2, S_u^X|) \cdot (S_u^S_u^X - (S_u^RS_u^X)^2 + C_u^RS_u^X + C_u^RS_u^X)) = 0$$

 $(S_u^0 - |(S_u^RX)^2, S_u^X|) \cdot (S_u^S_u^X - (S_u^RS_u^X)^2) = 0$
(7)

From (3) and (7) we have by 82.

$$(s_u^0 - (s_u^X - (s_u^X)^2)) \cdot (s_u^S + (s_u^S + s_u^X)^2) = 0$$
 (8)

Now

$$(S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}XX)^{2})) \cdot (S_{u}^{0}S_{v}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RS_{v}^{0}X)^{2})$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RX)^{2})) \cdot (C_{u}^{0}(S_{u}^{0}S_{v}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RS_{v}^{0}X)^{2})$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RX)^{2})) \cdot (C_{u}^{0}S_{u}^{0}X - C_{u}^{0}(S_{u}^{0}RS_{v}^{0}X)^{2})$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RX)^{2})) \cdot (C_{u}^{0}S_{u}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RX)^{2})$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RX)^{2})) \cdot C_{u}^{0}(S_{u}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RX)^{2})$$

$$= (S_{u}^{0} - (S_{u}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RX)^{2})) \cdot C_{u}^{0}(S_{u}^{0}X - (S_{u}^{0}RX)^{2})$$

$$= 0$$

We can therefore say

$$(S_u^0 - (S_u^X - (S_u^X)^2)) \cdot (S_u^S_v^X - (S_u^RS_v^X)^2) = 0$$
 for all u, v , and $S_u^0 - (S_u^RO)^2 = 0$.

Hence by rule of inference 63.

$$S_u^X \cdot (S_u^RX)^2 = 0$$
 as required.

96.
$$(RX)^2 - X = 0$$

Proof From (4) in 95. we have

$$(S_u^0 - |(S_u^{XX})^2, S_u^X|) \cdot |RS_u^X, S_u^X| = 0$$
 (1)

and from the defining equation for $RS_{\mathbf{u}}X$

$$((S_uRX)^2 - S_uX) \cdot RS_uX = ((S_uRX)^2 - S_uX) \cdot RX$$

$$((S_u^{RX})^2 - S_u^{X}) \cdot |RS_u^{X}, RX| = 0$$

by 72.

$$(s_u^0 - | RX, RS_u^1).(s_u^0 - ((RX)^2 - X)).((RS_u^1)^2 - X) = 0$$

by virtue of the fact that
$$F(C_uX) = C_uF(X) \text{ for } F(X) = (RX)^2 - X$$

Hence by 93.

$$((S_u^{RX})^2 - S_u^{X}) \cdot (S_u^{0} - ((RX)^2 - X)) \cdot ((RS_u^{X})^2 - X) = 0$$

and therefore by 86.

$$((S_u RX)^2 - S_u X) \cdot (S_u O - ((RX)^2 - X)) \cdot ((RS_u X)^2 - S_u X) = 0$$
 (2)

From (1) and (2), by 91., splitting (1), using 90. and 55., in 91. substitute

$$A = ((S_u RX)^2 - S_u X)$$

$$B = S_u 0 - (S_u X - (S_u RX)^2)$$

$$C = (RS_u X)^2 - S_u X$$

$$D = S_u 0 - ((RX)^2 - X)$$

$$(s_u \circ \div (s_u x \div (s_u Rx)^2)).(s_u \circ \div ((Rx)^2 \div x)).((Rs_u x)^2 \div s_u x) = 0$$

by 95.

$$(s_u \circ - ((RX)^2 - X)) \cdot ((Rs_u X)^2 - s_u X) = 0$$
 (3)

Now

$$(S_{u} \circ \div ((RX)^{2} - X)) \cdot (((RS_{u}X)^{2} - S_{u}X)) = (S_{u} \circ \div ((RX)^{2} - X)) \cdot C_{u}((RS_{u}X)^{2} - S_{u}X)$$

$$u \neq v$$

$$= (S_{u} \circ \div ((RX)^{2} - X)) \cdot (C_{u}(RS_{u}X)^{2} - C_{u}S_{u}X)$$

$$= (S_{u} \circ \div ((RX)^{2} - X)) \cdot (C_{u}(RX)^{2} - C_{u}X)$$

$$= (S_{u} \circ \div ((RX)^{2} - X)) \cdot ((RX)^{2} - X)$$

$$= (S_{u} \circ \div ((RX)^{2} - X)) \cdot ((RX)^{2} - X)$$

$$= 0$$

7.

We can therefore say,

$$(S_u^0 - ((RX)^2 - X)) \cdot ((RS_v^X)^2 - S_v^X = 0$$
 for all u,v,
and $(R0)^2 - 0 = 0$.

Hence by rule of inference 63.

$$(RX)^2 - X = 0$$

97. Rule of inference

$$A \stackrel{\bullet}{-} B = 0$$

$$B \stackrel{\bullet}{-} A = 0$$

$$A = B$$

Proof
$$A + (B - A) = B + (A - B)$$

$$A + 0 = B + 0$$

$$A = B$$
Key equation
$$Premises$$

98. Rule of inference

$$A^2 - B^2 = 0$$

$$A - B = 0$$

Consider first the result Proof

(a)
$$(S_u^0 - (X - Y).X).(X - Y) = 0$$

Now obviously

$$(s_u \circ - (x - Y).x).(x - Y).x = 0$$
 44.

and further,

$$(s_{u}^{0} - (x - y) \cdot x) \cdot (x - y) \cdot (s_{v}^{0} - x) = (s_{u}^{0} - (x - y) \cdot x) \cdot ((s_{v}^{0} - x) \cdot x - (s_{v}^{0} - x) \cdot y)$$

$$= (s_{u}^{0} - (x - y) \cdot x) \cdot (0 - (s_{v}^{0} - x) \cdot y)$$

$$= (s_{u}^{0} - (x - y) \cdot x) \cdot 0$$

$$= (s_{u}^{0} - (x - y) \cdot x) \cdot 0$$

$$= 0$$

$$43.$$

Hence by rule of inference 93.

$$(S_{11}0 - (X - Y).X).(X - Y) = 0$$
 for (a)

Put

$$X = A + B$$

$$Y = B + B$$

$$(S_{u}^{0} - ((A + B) - (B + B)) \cdot (A + B)) \cdot ((A + B) - (B + B)) = 0$$

$$(S_{u}^{0} - (A - B) \cdot (A + B)) \cdot (A - B) = 0$$

$$(S_{u}^{0} - (A + B) \cdot (A - B)) \cdot (A - B) = 0$$

$$(S_{u}^{0} - ((A^{2} + B \cdot A) - (A \cdot B + B^{2})) \cdot (A - B) = 0$$

$$(S_{u}^{0} - ((A^{2} + B \cdot A) - (A \cdot B + B^{2})) \cdot (A - B) = 0$$

$$(S_{u}^{0} - ((A^{2} + B \cdot A) - (A \cdot B + B^{2})) \cdot (A - B) = 0$$

$$(S_u^0 - (A^2 - B^2)) \cdot (A - B) = 0$$
 46.24.

Hence

$$(S_u^0 - 0) \cdot (A - B) = 0$$
 Premises
$$S_u^0 \cdot (A - B) = 0$$
 18.
$$C_u^0 \cdot (A - B) = 0$$
 for u=1,...,n 60.
$$A - B = 0$$
 as required 92.

$$S_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{A}^{2} \stackrel{\bullet}{-} \mathbf{B}^{2} = 0$$

$$C_{\mathbf{u}} (S_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{A} \stackrel{\bullet}{-} \mathbf{B}) = 0$$

Proof
$$C_u(B - A) \cdot (S_u A - B) = 0$$
 from 94.

Hence,

$$C_{u}(B + A) \cdot (B - A) \cdot (S_{u}A - B) = 0$$
 5.44.
 $C_{u}(B^{2} - A^{2}) \cdot (S_{u}A - B) = 0$ for all u. 53.46.24.

Now

$$(S_u^0 - (B^2 - A^2)) \cdot (S_u^0 - (S_u^2 - B^2)) = 0$$
 for all u, 69.

and therefore

$$(S_u^0 - (S_u^A^2 - B^2)) \cdot C_u(S_u^A - B) = 0$$
 49.93.
 $(S_u^0 - 0) \cdot (S_u^A - B) = 0$ 49.59.Premises
 $S_u^0 \cdot (S_u^A - B) = 0$ 18.
 $C_u(S_u^A - B) = 0$ for u=1,...,n 60.

100. $RA^2 = A$

From 95.96., we have

$$S_{u}X - (S_{u}RX)^{2} = 0$$

$$(RX)^{2} - X = 0$$

Put

$$X = A^2$$

$$S_uA^2 - (S_uRA^2)^2 = 0$$

$$(RA^2)^2 - A^2 = 0$$

$$C_{u}(S_{u}A - S_{u}RA^{2}) = 0$$

$$RA^2 - A = 0$$
 98.

99.

$$A - RA^2 = 0$$
 21.92.

Hence $RA^2 = A$ 97.

Having proved the basic property of the square root function, we now have to prove the properties

6.

102.
$$Rt(A^2 + A + A) = A$$

Proof
$$S_{ij}X - (S_{ij}Rt(X))^2 = 0$$

L(X,Y) = R(X,Y)

$$X = C_{11}(A^2 + A + A)$$

$$S_u^C_u(A^2 + A + A) - (S_u^Rt(C_u(A^2 + A + A)))^2 = 0$$

$$(S_{11}C_{11}A)^{2} - (S_{11}C_{11}Rt(A^{2} + A + A))^{2} = 0$$
 30.47.

$$S_{ij}C_{ij}A - S_{ij}C_{ij}Rt(A^2 + A + A) = 0$$
98.

$$C_{u}A - C_{u}Rt(A^{2} + A + A) = 0$$
 (1)

 $(Rt(X))^2 - X = 0$

$$S_{ij}(Rt(X))^2 - S_{ij}X = 0$$
 21.

$$S_{11}(Rt(C_{11}(A^2 + A + A)))^2 - S_{11}C_{11}(A^2 + A + A) = 0$$

$$S_{u}(C_{u}Rt(A^{2} + A + A))^{2} - (S_{u}C_{u}A)^{2} = 0$$
 30.47.

$$C_{\mathbf{u}}(S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}Rt(\mathbf{A}^{2} + \mathbf{A} + \mathbf{A}) - S_{\mathbf{u}}C_{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{A}) = 0$$
99.

$$C_u Rt(A^2 + A + A) - C_u A = 0$$
 (2) 21.32.

Therefore from 97 we have

$$C_{u}Rt(A^{2} + A + A) = C_{u}A$$

Hence we can say

$$Rt(A^2 + A + A) = A$$

92.

103. Rule of inference

$$A \stackrel{\bullet}{-} B = 0$$

$$B \stackrel{\bullet}{-} C = 0$$

$$A - C = 0$$

Proof
$$B + (A - B) = A + (B - A)$$

$$B = A + (B - A)$$

$$B \cdot (B \cdot A) = (A + (B \cdot A)) \cdot (B \cdot A)$$

$$C + (B - C) = B + (C - B)$$

$$C = B + (C - B)$$

Key equation

Premises, 7.

23.

Key equation

Premises, 7.

Hence by substitution

$$A \stackrel{\cdot}{-} C = (B \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (B \stackrel{\cdot}{-} A)) \stackrel{\cdot}{-} (B + (C \stackrel{\cdot}{-} B))$$
 from above
 $= B \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((B \stackrel{\cdot}{-} A) + B + (C \stackrel{\cdot}{-} B))$ 20.
 $= 0 \stackrel{\cdot}{-} ((B \stackrel{\cdot}{-} A) + (C \stackrel{\cdot}{-} B))$ 23.
 $= 0$ as required. 19.

104. Rt(
$$(U+V)^2+U$$
) = U + V

The results (1) and (2) together using 97. give

$$Rt((U + V)^2 + U) = U + V$$

105.
$$L(J(U,V)) = U$$

Proof

$$L(J(U,V) = ((U + V)^{2} + U) - (Rt((U + V)^{2} + U))^{2}$$

$$= ((U + V)^{2} + U) - (U + V)^{2}$$

$$= U$$
23.

106.
$$K(J(U,V)) = V$$

Proof

$$K(J(U,V)) = Rt((U + V)^2 + U) - L(J(U,V))$$

= $(U + V) - U$ 105.
= V 23.

We have therefore proved that a set of functions with the required properties to achieve the reduction in parameters in the definition of primitive recursion exists in commutative multiple successor arithmetic.

CHAPTER IV

INITIAL FUNCTIONS REQUIRED FOR THE REDUCED DEFINITIONS BY PRIMITIVE RECURSIONS

In this chapter we will consider the four defining schema which were derived in Chapter II, and examine these to see if we need to adjoin further functions to the initial set of all primitive recursive functions.

The functions used to reduce the parameters in the definitions of primitive recursive functions were K(X), L(X), & J(U,V), defined as follows:

$$J(U,V) = (U + V)^{2} + U$$

$$L(X) = X - (RX)^{2}$$

$$K(X) = RX - L(X)$$

In order therefore to define all primitive recursive functions in the reduced defining schemas, we may need to adjoin further functions to the set of initial functions in order that the functions K(X), L(X) & J(U,V) can be defined.

Now K(X), L(X) & J(U,V) are explicitly comprised of the functions Y + X, Y - X, X.X, RX.

If we are able to define these functions in each of the schemas R_1,R_1^*,R_1^{**} and R_1^{***} , then there would be no need to adjoin further functions to the initial functions. However we shall find that in the case of R_1^{***} we require to adjoin a function to the initial functions, Q(X), which will be defined later.

R₁ This is the defining schema given by

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

 $F(S_{11}X,Y) = B_{11}(X,Y,F(X,Y))$ $u=1,...,n$

Y + X is defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = S_{u}F(X,Y)$$

For Y $\stackrel{\centerdot}{\ }$ X we first define $P_u X$ by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{v}}X) = \begin{cases} X & u=v \\ S_{\mathbf{v}}F(X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

Then Y - X is defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = P_{u}F(X,Y)$$

C,X is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{v}}X) = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}F(X) & u=v \\ F(X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

and therefore X.X is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_uX) = S_uF(X) + C_uX + C_uX$$

RX is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

 $F(S_u X) = F(X) + (S_u O - ((S_u F(X))^2 - S_u X))$

Thus the initial functions and the defining schema R_1 alone are sufficient to define all primitive recursive functions.

R₁* This is the defining schema given by

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

 $F(S_{11}X,Y) = B_{11}(X,F(X,Y))$ u=1,...,n

Defining the functions Y + X, Y - X, $X \cdot X$ and RX as above in R_1 in fact defines all these functions under the reduced schema R_1^* . Hence we can say that 'The initial functions and the defining schema R_1^* alone are sufficient to define all primitive recursive functions'.

R₁** This is the defining schema given by

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

 $F(S_uX,Y) = B_u(Y,F(X,Y))$ $u=1,...,r$

Y + X is defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_uX,Y) = S_uF(X,Y)$$

Now for Y $\stackrel{\bullet}{-}$ X we have to define $P_u X$, and to achieve this we proceed as follows.

 $C_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{X}}$ is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{v}}X) = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{v}}F(X) & u=v \\ F(X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

X.Y is defined by

and

$$F(0,Y) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = F(X,Y) + C_{u}Y$$

$$X \cdot X = F(X,X).$$

S,0 - X is defined by

$$F(0) = S_{u}0$$

$$F(S_{v}X) = \begin{cases} 0 & u=v \\ F(X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

Define D_kX by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{k}} \circ - F(X) & u=k \\ F(X) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

This takes the value $S_k^{\ 0}$ if ${}^{\ '}S_k^{\ '}$ appears an odd number of times in X_*

We can therefore define T_kX by

This function is such that when X contains only one of ${}^tS_k{}^t$ successors then ${}^tK_k{}^t$ contains an odd number of ${}^tS_k{}^t$ successors, otherwise ${}^tK_k{}^t$ contains an even number of ${}^tS_k{}^t$ successors. Hence the function defined by

$$s_k o - p_k T_k x$$

takes the value 0 if X contains only one ${}^{1}\overline{S}_{k}{}^{1}$ successors, and $S_{k}0$ otherwise.

Define
$$RM_k(X,2)$$
 by

$$RM_{k}(X,2) = D_{k}X$$

and $RM_k(X,3)$ by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}^{x}X) = \begin{cases} (S_{k}O - F(X)) + S_{k}S_{k}O \cdot (S_{k}O - (S_{k}O - D_{k}T_{k}(F(X)))) & u=k \\ F(X) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

This function is the remainder of the number of ${}^tS_k{}^t$ successors in X when that number is divided by 3, e.g.

$$RM_k(S_kS_k^0,3) = S_kS_k^0$$

$$RM_k(S_1S_1S_2S_kS_kS_kS_k0,3) = S_k0$$

Consider now the function $N_{\mathbf{k}}X$ defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = \begin{cases} (F(X) + S_{k}O) \cdot (S_{k}O - RM_{k}(F(X),3)) + \\ (F(X) + S_{k}S_{k}O) \cdot (S_{k}O - (S_{k}O - RM_{k}(F(X),3))) & u=k \\ F(X) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

In other words

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = \begin{cases} F(X) + S_{k}O & \text{if } RM_{k}(F(X),3) = 0 \\ \\ F(X) + S_{k}S_{k}O & \text{if } RM_{k}(F(X),3) \neq 0 \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} F(X) + S_{k}S_{k}O & \text{if } RM_{k}(F(X),3) \neq 0 \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} F(X) + S_{k}S_{k}O & \text{if } RM_{k}(F(X),3) \neq 0 \end{cases}$$

Clearly $N_k X = N_k(C_k X)$; that is we are only considering the 'S_k' successors in X to define $N_k X$, if we consider that $1 = S_k 0$, $2 = S_k S_k 0$,..., etc. and consider X as $C_k X$ which would then be a number: then in normal arithmetical terms

$$N_{\mathbf{k}}X = \begin{cases} 3. X/2 & \text{if } X \text{ is even} \\ (3. X - 1)/2 & \text{if } X \text{ is odd} \end{cases}$$

as there are no successor symbols other than ${}^{t}S_{k}^{-t}$ in $N_{k}X_{\bullet}$

This result we shall prove by induction on X; suppose the above is true for X, then

$$\begin{split} N_k(X+1) &= \begin{cases} 3 \cdot (X+1)/2 & \text{if } X+1 \text{ is even} \\ (3 \cdot (X+1)-1)/2 & \text{of } X+1 \text{ is odd} \end{cases} \\ N_k(X+1) &= \begin{cases} (3 \cdot X+3)/2 & \text{if } X \text{ is odd} \\ (3 \cdot X+2)/2 & \text{if } X \text{ is even} \end{cases} \\ &= \begin{cases} (3 \cdot X-1)/2+2 & \text{if } X \text{ is even} \\ 3 \cdot X/2+1 & \text{if } X \text{ is even} \end{cases} \\ &= \begin{cases} 3 \cdot X/2+1 & \text{if } X \text{ is even} \\ (3 \cdot X-1)/2+2 & \text{if } X \text{ is odd} \end{cases} \end{split}$$

This is equivalent to

$$N_k(X + 1) = \begin{cases} N_kX + 1 & \text{if } X \text{ is even} \\ N_kX + 2 & \text{if } X \text{ is odd} \end{cases}$$

by hypothesis.

Now if X is even $N_k X = 3.X/2$ and therefore divisible by 3, if X is odd then $N_k X = (3.X - 1)/2$ and therefore not divisible by 3. Hence

$$N_{k}(X + 1) = \begin{cases} N_{k}X + 1 & \text{if } RM(N_{k}X,3) = 0 \\ N_{k}X + 2 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

The hypothesis is true for X=0; hence $N_k X$ is the function stated. Define now $M_k(X,Y)$ by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = \begin{cases} N_{k}(F(X,Y)) \cdot (S_{k}O - RM_{k}(F(X,Y),2)) & u=k \\ F(X,Y) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

In order to prove the properties of this function we need first to define the function $(Y^X)_k$ by

$$F(0,Y) = S_k 0$$

$$F(S_u X,Y) = \begin{cases} Y.F(X,Y) & u=k \\ \\ F(X,Y) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

In the notation defined $(Y^X)_k$ is the function Y^X in normal arithmetical notation for the S_k component of both X and Y, e.g.

$$(S_1 S_k S_k O^{S_2 S_k S_k O})_k = S_k S_k S_k S_k O$$

which with the previous notation $S_k^0 = 1$, $S_k^0 = 2$, etc. ... ignoring all other successors, then

$$(S_1S_kS_k^0S_2S_kS_k^0)_k = 2^2$$
 (normal exponent)
= 4
= $S_kS_kS_k^0$

We analyse the function $M_k(X,Y)$ as follows.

Let C_kY be non-zero, and let 2^t be the highest power of 2 that divides it exactly; then $M_k(X,Y)$ is such that

if
$$t < X$$
 then $M_{\nu}(X,Y) = 0$

if $t\geqslant X$ then $M_k(X,Y)$ is non-zero, and 2^{t-X} is the highest power of 2 that divides it exactly.

<u>Proof</u> The proof is by induction on X. The case X = 0 gives

$$M_{k}(X,Y) = M_{k}(0,Y)$$

$$\Rightarrow Y$$

$$\approx 2^{t} \cdot A \quad (A \neq 0)$$

$$= 2^{t-0} \cdot A \quad (as t \geq X)$$

The result is therefore true for X=0. Let us assume the result for $0 \le X \le m$, and consider the case m+1.

Suppose t < m. Then by the hypothesis $M_k(m,Y) = 0$, and from the definition we have

$$M_{k}(m+1,Y) = N_{k}(M_{k}(m,Y)) \cdot (S_{k}O - RM_{k}(M_{k}(m,Y),2))$$
 as $1 = S_{k}O$
 $= N_{k}(M_{k}(m,Y)) \cdot S_{k}O$
 $= N_{k}(O) \cdot S_{k}O$
 $= O \cdot S_{k}O$
 $= O$

It is worth noting here that as we are only using the 'k'th components then $A.S_k^0 = A$, and $C_k^A = A$, as we shall only consider the answer in terms of 'S_k' successors.

Now suppose t=m. Then by the hypothesis $M_k(m,Y)$ is non-zero, and $2^{t-m}=2^0$ is the highest power of 2 that divides it exactly, that is $M_k(m,Y)$ is odd. Hence

$$M_{k}(m+1),Y) = N_{k}(M_{k}(m,Y)).(S_{k}0 - RM_{k}(M_{k}(m,Y),2))$$
As $M_{k}(m,Y)$ is odd then $RM_{k}(M_{k}(m,Y),2) = S_{k}0$ and so
$$M_{k}(m+1),Y) = N_{k}(M_{k}(m,Y)).(S_{k}0 - S_{k}0)$$

= 0 as required as t < m+1.

Finally, suppose t > m. Then by the hypothesis $M_k(m,Y)$ is non-zero and 2^{t-m} is the highest power of 2 that divides it exactly. Hence $M_k(m,Y)$ is even. Therefore

$$\begin{split} \mathbf{M}_{k}(\mathbf{m+1}, \mathbf{Y}) &= \mathbf{N}_{k}(\mathbf{M}_{k}(\mathbf{m}, \mathbf{Y})) \cdot (\mathbf{S}_{k} \mathbf{0} - \mathbf{R} \mathbf{M}_{k}(\mathbf{M}_{k}(\mathbf{m}, \mathbf{Y}), 2)) \\ &= \mathbf{N}_{k}(\mathbf{M}_{k}(\mathbf{m}, \mathbf{Y})) \cdot (\mathbf{S}_{k} \mathbf{0} - \mathbf{0}) \\ &= \mathbf{N}_{k}(\mathbf{M}_{k}(\mathbf{m}, \mathbf{Y})) \cdot \mathbf{S}_{k} \mathbf{0} \\ &= \mathbf{N}_{k}(\mathbf{M}_{k}(\mathbf{m}, \mathbf{Y})) \\ &= 3 \cdot \mathbf{M}_{k}(\mathbf{m}, \mathbf{Y}) / 2 \quad \text{as} \quad \mathbf{M}_{k}(\mathbf{m}, \mathbf{Y}) \text{ is even.} \end{split}$$

We therefore have

$$M_{k}(m+1, y, Y) = 3.M_{k}(m, Y)/2$$

Hence if 2^{t-m} is the highest power of 2 that divides $M_k(m,Y)$ exactly, then $2^{(t-m)-1}$ is the highest power of 2 that divides $M_k(m+1,Y)$ exactly, that is $2^{t-(m+1)}$ is the highest power of 2 that divides $M_k(m+1,Y)$ exactly. Hence the result.

From this result we can say that the function

$$M_{k}(x,(s_{k}s_{k}c^{Y})_{k})$$

is non-zero in 'S_k' components, if and only if 2^X divides 2^Y exactly (in the previous notation), that is if and only if $X \leqslant Y$, in 'S_k' components. Hence

$$S_k^0 - M_k(X,(S_k^S_k^{0^Y})_k) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } C_k(X - Y) = 0 \\ S_k^0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

Define now the function $L_k(X,Y)$ by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = \begin{cases} (F(X,Y) + S_{k}0) \cdot (S_{k}0 - M_{k}(Y,(S_{k}S_{k}0^{F(X,Y)})_{k})) & u=k \\ S_{u}F(X,Y) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

which is such that

$$F(S_{k}X,Y) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } F(X,Y) \geqslant Y \\ S_{k}F(X,Y) & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$
 (in 'S_k' components)

The function $L_k(X,X)$ is therefore defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_uX) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } F(X) \geqslant X \\ S_uF(X) & \text{otherwise} \end{cases} \qquad \text{(in 'S}_k components)$$

$$\begin{cases} S_uF(X) & \text{otherwise} \\ S_uF(X) & \text{u} \neq k \end{cases}$$

P_kX is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = \begin{cases} X & u=k \\ S_{u}F(X) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

which is the same as

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_uX) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } F(X) \geqslant X \\ S_kF(X) & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} (\text{in } S_k \text{ components}) \\ u = k \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} S_kF(X) & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

Hence by uniqueness $P_k X = L_k(X,X)$, and $L_k(X,X)$ is defined in $R_1 **$ by substituting X for Y in the function $L_k(X,Y)$ which is defined under the schema $R_1 **$. For the proof of this in single successor arithmetic see [8].

However we can obtain the result in the following manner.

DX or RM(X,2) is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_u^X) = S_u^0 - F(X)$$

TX is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_u X) = S_u F(X) \cdot (S_u O - F(X)) + F(X) \cdot S_u F(X) \cdot (S_u O - F(X))$$

RM(X,3) is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

 $F(S_u X) = (S_u 0 - F(X)) + S_u S_u 0 \cdot (S_u 0 - D(T(F(X))))$

These functions are such that

$$DX = D_{1}X + D_{2}X + \dots + D_{n}X$$

$$RM(X,2) = RM_{1}(X,2) + RM_{2}(X,2) + \dots + RM_{n}(X,2)$$

$$TX = T_{1}X + T_{2}X + \dots + T_{n}X$$

$$RM(X,3) = RM_{1}(X,3) + RM_{2}(X,3) + \dots + RM_{n}(X,3)$$

NX is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = S_{u}F(X).(S_{u}O - RM(F(X),3)) + S_{u}S_{u}F(X).(S_{u}O - (S_{u}O - RM(F(X),3)))$$

and $NX = N_1X + N_2X + \dots + N_nX$

M(X,Y) is defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = N(F(X,Y)) \cdot (S_{u}O - RM(F(X,Y),2))$$
and
$$M(X,Y) = C_{1}M_{1}(X,Y) + C_{2}M_{2}(X,Y) + \dots + C_{n}M_{n}(X,Y)$$

 $(Y^X)_k$ is defined as before.

L(X,Y) is defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = S_{u}F(X,Y) \cdot (S_{u}O - M(Y,(S_{u}S_{u}O^{F(X,Y)})_{u}))$$
and
$$L(X,Y) = C_{1}L_{1}(X,Y) + C_{2}L_{2}(X,Y) + \dots + C_{n}L_{n}(X,Y)$$

Define $\overline{C}_{b}X$ by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = \begin{cases} F(X) & u=k \\ S_{\mathbf{u}}F(X) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

 $\overline{\mathtt{c}}_{\mathbf{k}}\mathtt{X}$ is therefore all the components of X except the 'k'th component; hence

$$C_k X + \overline{C}_k X = X$$

From this $P_k X = C_k L(X,X) + \overline{C}_k X$.

It is interesting to note that in multiple successor arithmetic, if it were necessary to adjoin the functions P_uX u=1,...,n to the initial functions, it would have been sufficient to adjoin the function PX defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S,X) = X$$

as clearly $P_k X = C_k P X + \overline{C}_k X$, and P X = L(X,X).

We now proceed to define Q_LX , which is the function

$$Q_{k}X = S_{ij}0 - (X - (RX)^{2})$$

RX standing for Rt(X) as defined in Chapter III, Lemma 65.

Define Y - X by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{ij}X,Y) = P_{ij}F(X,Y)$$

Consider now the function T(X,Y) by

$$F(0,Y) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}^{X},Y) = S_{u}^{F}(X,Y) + (S_{u}^{O} - ((F(X,Y)^{2} - Y) + (Y - F(X,Y)^{2}))).$$

This function is such that $T(S_uX,Y)$ is obtained from T(X,Y) by adding S_u^0 unless $(T(X,Y))^2 = Y$, in which case we add S_u^0 . This can happen only if $X^2 = Y$. It is clear therefore that

$$T(X,Y) = \begin{cases} X & \text{if } X^2 \leqslant Y \\ \begin{cases} X + QY & \text{if } X^2 > Y \end{cases} \end{cases}$$

where $QX = Q_1X + Q_2X + \dots + Q_nX$.

Hence

$$Q_{u}X = T(S_{u}X,X) - S_{u}X$$

From $Q_{11}X$ we obtain RX as follows:

RM(X,3) was defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_uX) = (S_uO - F(X)) + S_uS_uO \cdot (S_uO - (S_uO - D(F(X))))$$

where DX and TX are defined as previous.

We now define UX by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{ij}X) = S_{ij}F(X) + RM_{ij}(F(X),3)$$

Clearly

$$UX = X + Div(X,2)$$

where Div(X,2) is the function defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{ij}X) = F(X) + RM_{ij}(X,2)$$

We therefore obtain Div(X,2) in R_1** by the explicit definition

$$Div(X,2) = UX - X.$$

Consider the function

$$V_k X = X + S_k S_k O \cdot RX \cdot$$

This can be defined by the schema

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{k}}F(X) + S_{\mathbf{k}}S_{\mathbf{k}}O \cdot Q_{\mathbf{k}}(S_{\mathbf{k}}X) & \text{u=k} \\ S_{\mathbf{u}}F(X) & \text{u\neq k} \end{cases}$$

Now the following are equivalent, $S_k X$ is square (that is $(RS_k X)^2 = S_k X$), X is of the form $N^2 + C_k N + C_k N$. Hence from the definition of $V_k X$ we can say that $V_k X$ is of the form $N^2 + C_k N + C_k N + C_k N + C_k N$, and therefore $V_k X + S_k S_k S_k S_k O$ is square.

Our definition of $V_k X$ now becomes

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{k}}F(X) + S_{\mathbf{k}}S_{\mathbf{k}}0.Q_{\mathbf{k}}(F(X) + S_{\mathbf{k}}S_{\mathbf{k}}S_{\mathbf{k}}S_{\mathbf{k}}0) & u=k \\ S_{\mathbf{u}}F(X) & u\neq k \end{cases}$$

and is therefore defined by schema R₁ ***

From this

$$RX = Div(V_1X - X_2) + Div(V_2X - X_2) + ... + Div(V_nX - X_2)$$

as
$$S_k S_k O.RX = S_k S_k O.C_k RX$$

However we can define VX by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_uX) = S_uF(X) + S_uS_uO \cdot Q_u(F(X) + S_uS_uS_uS_uO)$$

and

$$RX = Div(VX - X,2).$$

For the proof of this result in single successor arithmetic see [7]. However, having defined $Y \stackrel{\bullet}{-} X$ in R_1^{**} we can define the function W(X,Y) by

$$F(0,Y) = 0$$

$$F(S_uX,Y) = F(X,Y) + (S_uO - ((S_uF(X,Y))^2 - Y))$$

and

$$RX = W(X,X)$$

We have now defined the functions

$$Y + X$$
, $Y - X$, $X \cdot X$, RX ,

in R_1^{**} without introducing any further functions to the set of initial functions. We can therefore say 'The initial functions and the defining schema R_1^{**} alone are sufficient to define all primitive recursive functions'.

R₁*** This is the defining schema given by

$$F(0,Y) = A(Y)$$

 $F(S_uX,Y) = B_u(F(X,Y))$ $u=1,...,n$

Y + X is defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = S_{u}F(X,Y)$$

In this schema we now suppose that the function QX is adjoined to the initial set of functions.

C_kX is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = \begin{cases} S_{k}F(X) & u=k \\ F(X) & u\neq k \end{cases}$$

and therefore $\mathbb{Q}_{k}^{\mathbf{X}}$ is obtained by

$$Q_{k}X = C_{k}QX$$

Next define $S_k^0 - X$ by

$$F(0) = S_k 0$$

$$F(S_u X) = \begin{cases} 0 & u=k \\ f(X) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

and therefore $Y.(S_k^0 - X)$ is defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = \begin{cases} 0 & u=k \\ f(X,Y) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

Before we can proceed it is necessary to prove the following Lemma.

III.18.

III.22.

Lemma
$$(S_v^0 - X) = (S_v^0 - (S_v^0 - (S_v^0 - X)))$$

$$\begin{array}{rcl} \underline{\text{Proof}} & & \text{L(0)} = S_{\mathbf{v}} \text{O} & \stackrel{\bullet}{-} & \text{O} \\ & & & & \\ & & & & \\ & & & & \\ \end{array}$$

0 III.18.

$$R(0) = (S_{v}0 - (S_{v}0 - (S_{v}0 - 0)))$$

$$= (S_{v}0 - (S_{v}0 - S_{v}0))$$

$$= S_{v}0 - 0$$

 $= S_{v}^{0}$ III.18.

$$L(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = S_{\mathbf{v}}O - S_{\mathbf{u}}X$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u=\mathbf{v} & \text{III.61.} \\ S_{\mathbf{v}}O - X & u\neq\mathbf{v} & \text{III.61.} \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u=\mathbf{v} \\ L(X) & u\neq\mathbf{v} \end{cases}$$

$$R(S_{u}X) = (S_{v}0 - (S_{v}0 - (S_{v}0 - S_{u}X)))$$

$$= \begin{cases} (S_{v}0 - (S_{v}0 - 0)) & u=v \\ (S_{v}0 - (S_{v}0 - (S_{v}0 - X))) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} S_{v}0 - S_{v}0 & u=v \\ R(X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u=v \\ R(X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u\neq v \\ R(X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

$$= \begin{cases} 0 & u\neq v \\ R(X) & u\neq v \end{cases}$$

 $L(X) = R(X) \qquad III.26.$

Now in the function Y.($S_k^0 - X$) substitute $S_k^0 - X$ for Y and define D_X^X by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = \begin{cases} S_{k}0 - F(X) & u=k \\ F(X) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

Now in the function Y.($S_k^0 - X$) substitute D_k^X for Y and $S_k^0 - Q_k^X$ for X; therefore as $Q_k^X = S_k^0 - (X - (RX)^2)$ we have the function

$$D_k X \cdot (S_k O - (X - (RX)^2)) = D_k X \cdot Q_k X$$

and clearly from III.96, which proves that $(RX)^2 - X = 0$, we have that

$$Q_k X = (S_k O - |X, (RX)^2|)$$

and therefore

Hence

$$D_{k}X \cdot Q_{k}X = \begin{cases} S_{k}O & \text{if } X \text{ is an odd square in '}S_{k}' \text{ successors} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

Define therefore the function $\mathbf{E}_{\mathbf{k}}\mathbf{X}$ by

$$E_k X = S_k S_k X.(S_k 0 - D_k X.Q_k X)$$

which is obtained in R_1*** by substitution in Y.($S_k^0 - X$).

We can then say that

$$\mathbf{E}_{k}^{\mathbf{X}} = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if X is an odd square in 'S}_{k}' \text{ successors} \\ \{\mathbf{C}_{k}^{\mathbf{X}} + \mathbf{S}_{k}^{\mathbf{S}}\mathbf{S}_{k}^{\mathbf{0}} & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

Before we can proceed now we will have to define the function X.X in R_1*** . We are able to define $V_k X$ as before by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{k}}F(X) + S_{\mathbf{k}}S_{\mathbf{k}}0 \cdot Q_{\mathbf{k}}(F(X) + S_{\mathbf{k}}S_{\mathbf{k}}S_{\mathbf{k}}S_{\mathbf{k}}0) & u=k \\ S_{\mathbf{u}}F(X) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

and

$$V_k X = X + S_k S_k O \cdot RX$$

From this clearly X.X is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_uX) = S_uV_u(F(X))$$

Having now defined X.X in R_1^{***} consider the function $H_k(X,Y)$, defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y \cdot Y + C_k Y + S_k 0$$

$$F(S_u X,Y) = \begin{cases} E_k(F(X,Y)) & u=k \\ F(X,Y) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

Clearly

$$H_k(X,X) = E_k^X(X \cdot X + C_kX + S_k0)$$

where E_k^XY is defined by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_{u}X,Y) = \begin{cases} E_{k}(F(X,Y)) & u=k \\ F(X,Y) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

 $\mathbf{E}_{\mathbf{k}}^{\mathbf{X}}\mathbf{Y}$ is therefore $\mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{k}}\mathbf{X}$ operations of $\mathbf{E}_{\mathbf{k}}$ on \mathbf{Y} .

Let X contain an even number of 'S_k' successors, then clearly, for $H_k(X,X)$, after $\frac{1}{2}X$ (normal arithmetical expression) operations of 'E_k', as the argument is never an odd square in 'S_k' successors, and every operation of 'E_k' adds S_kS_k 0 to the argument

$$H_k(X,X) = E_k^{\frac{1}{2}X}(X \cdot X + C_kX + C_kX + S_kO)$$

At this time the argument is now an odd square in ${}^tS_k{}^t$ successors and thus,

$$H_{k}(X,X) = E_{k}^{\frac{1}{2}X - S_{k}0}(0)$$
$$= C_{k}X - S_{k}S_{k}0$$

Define \bar{C}_k^{X} by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = \begin{cases} F(X) & u=k \\ S_{u}F(X) & u \neq k \end{cases}$$

This function is all components of X except the 'k'th component, that is the inverse of the function $C_{\mathbf{k}}X$

$$C_k X + \overline{C}_k X = X$$

From $H_k(X,X)$ we obtain $C_k P_k X$ by

$$C_k P_k X = (S_k O - (S_k O - X)) \cdot (S_k O - DX) \cdot S_k H_k (X, X) + DX \cdot H_k (S_k X, S_k X)$$

which is obtained by repeated substitution into the function

Y.(
$$S_k^0 - X$$
) (from the definition this is obviously the same as ($S_k^0 - X$).Y)

and Y + X.

From this

$$P_k X = C_k P_k X + \overline{C}_k X$$

and now we can define Y - X by

$$F(0,Y) = Y$$

$$F(S_uX,Y) = P_uF(X,Y)$$

TX is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_uX) = S_uF(X) (S_uO - F(X)) + F(X) \cdot S_uF(X) \cdot (S_uO - (S_uO - F(X)))$$

RM(X,3) is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$\mathbf{F}(\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{X}}) = (\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{O}} \cdot \mathbf{F}(\mathbf{X})) + \mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{S}} \mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{O}} \cdot (\mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{O}} \cdot \mathbf{S}_{\mathbf{u}}^{\mathbf{O}} \cdot \mathbf{D}(\mathbf{T}(\mathbf{F}(\mathbf{X})))))$$

UX is defined by

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_u^X) = S_u^F(X) + RM_u(F(X),3)$$

and UX = X + Div(X,2)

We therefore have Div(X,2) in R₁*** by

$$Div(X,2) = UX - X$$

VX is defined by

and

$$F(0) = 0$$

$$F(S_{u}X) = S_{u}F(X) + S_{u}S_{u}0 \cdot Q_{u}(F(X) + S_{u}S_{u}S_{u}S_{u}0)$$

$$VX = X + S_{1}S_{1}S_{2}S_{2} \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot S_{n}S_{n}0 \cdot RX \quad \text{explicitly,}$$

$$RX = Div(VX - X, 2)$$

Hence by adjoining the function QX to the initial functions we have

$$Y + X$$
, $Y - X$, $X \cdot X$, RX ,

with the schema R1***.

defined the functions

We can therefore say that 'The initial functions with the function QX and the defining schema R_1^{***} are sufficient to define all primitive recursive functions'. We have not proved, though, that it is necessary to adjoin the function QX to the initial functions.

For the proof of the above result in single successor arithmetic see [7].

In the normal definition of the initial functions we have the 'n' successor functions $S_u(X)$ u=1,...,n. This set of n functions can in fact be reduced to 2 functions, that is S_1 0 and a function to generate further successor functions; for this we could use $0 \sigma_1 X$. Then

$$S_20 = 0 \sigma_1 S_1 0$$
 etc.

In the next section in this chapter we analyse the successor symbols in X, as mentioned in Chapter I.

ANALYSIS OF 'X'

In single successor arithmetic, the successors in X are all the same and thus require no distinction. Further, the number of successor symbols in X can be compared with those in Y simply by use of the functions $X \stackrel{\centerdot}{-} Y$ and $Y \stackrel{\centerdot}{-} X$, which indicate out of X and Y which has the most successor symbols and by how many. In fact, in single successor arithmetic X by itself informs us how many successor symbols it contains.

The problem of how many and which successor symbols X contains is not so easily answered. A question that immediately arises is how does one count the successor symbols. There are 'n' different counting systems; that is one for each successor, but no common counting system.

To achieve a homogeneous counting system, we consider the property

$$S_1 S_2 \dots S_n 0 \cdot X = X \cdot S_1 S_2 \dots S_n 0 = X$$

and further

$$S_1S_1S_2S_2...S_nS_nO.X = X.S_1S_1S_2S_2....S_nS_nO = X + X$$
 etc.

This property seems to suggest that we consider

$$S_1 S_2 \dots S_n^0 \qquad \text{as 1}$$
 and
$$S_1 S_1 S_2 S_2 \dots S_n^0 S_n^0 \qquad \text{as 2}$$

etc.

We shall therefore use a dummy successor 'S' to count as follows:

etc.

In order to analyse X in multiple successor arithmetic we wish to answer the following questions:-

- (i) How many successor symbols are there in X?
- (ii) How many different successor symbols?
- (iii) What are these different successor symbols?
- (iv) How many are there of each different successor symbol?

(i) How many successor symbols in X?

The answer to this question would obviously partition the set M_n of all numerals in multiple successor arithmetic into the sets U_n^0 , U_n^1 , U_n^2 ,..., U_n^r ,.... where

$$n$$
, n , n , n , n

$$U_n^0 = \{0\}$$

$$U_n^1 = \{S_v^0: v=1,...,n\}$$

$$U_n^2 = \{S_u S_v 0 : u, v=1,...,n, \& v \ge u\}$$

etc.

The number of successor symbols in X is determined quite simply by the function $\phi(X)$ defined by

$$\phi(0) = 0$$

$$\phi(S_{11}X) = S_1S_2,...,S_n\phi(X)$$
 u=1,...,n

or in the counting notation

$$\phi(0)=0$$

$$\phi(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = S\phi(X)$$

We can therefore say

$$X \in U_n^r$$
 if and only if $|r,\phi(X)| = 0$.

(ii) How many different successor symbols in X?

The answer to this question obviously gives the sets

$$\begin{array}{l} \textbf{D}_{n}^{o}, \ \textbf{D}_{n}^{1}, \ \textbf{D}_{n}^{2}, \dots \textbf{D}_{n}^{r}, \dots \ \text{ where} \\ \\ \textbf{D}_{n}^{o} = \{0\} \\ \\ \textbf{D}_{n}^{1} = \{\overline{\textbf{S}_{u}\textbf{S}_{u} \dots \textbf{S}_{u}}\textbf{0} : \ \textbf{u=1,...,n}, \ \& \ \textbf{p=1,2,....} \} \\ \\ \textbf{D}_{n}^{2} = \{\overline{\textbf{S}_{u}\textbf{S}_{u} \dots \textbf{S}_{u}}\overline{\textbf{S}_{v}\textbf{S}_{v} \dots \textbf{S}_{v}}\textbf{0} : \ \textbf{u,v=1,...,n}, \ \& \ \textbf{u\neq v} \ \& \ \textbf{p,q=1,2,....} \} \end{array}$$

etc.

We first define the function introduced in Chapter I:

$$Y^{X}O = 0$$

$$Y^{X}S_{u}X = Y^{X}X + Y \qquad u=1,...,n.$$

This function is obviously not commutative, as notice is taken of the successor symbols in Y but not those in X, and this particular property makes this function extremely useful.

Now define the function $\psi(X)$ by

$$\psi(0) = 0$$

$$\psi(S_uX) = S_u\psi(X)^X(S_uO - \psi(X)) + \psi(X)^X(S_uO - (S_uO - \psi(X)))$$
 u=1,...,n,

this function is such that

$$\psi(S_{\mathbf{u}}X) = \begin{cases} S_{\mathbf{u}}\psi(X) & \text{if } \psi(X) \text{ does not contain '}S_{\mathbf{u}}' \\ \{\psi(X) & \text{if } \psi(X) \text{ contains '}S_{\mathbf{u}}' \end{cases}$$

The important property of the function YXX which is used in this definition is

$$Y = Y^{X}S_{u}^{0}$$
 for all u

and so $\phi(\psi(\mathtt{X}))$ gives the number of different successors in X. We can therefore say

$$X \in D_n^r$$
 if and only if $|r,\phi(\psi(X))| = 0$

and
$$\psi(X) \in U_n^r$$
 if and only if $X \in D_n^r$.

(iii) What are these different successor symbols in X?

For this we need to distinguish between one successor symbol and another, so we define $\Sigma(X)$ by

$$\Sigma(0) = 0$$

$$\Sigma(S_uX) = u + \Sigma(X) \qquad u=1,...,n.$$

This definition is possible as n is finite.

 $\Sigma(X)$ is the sum of the suffixes of the successor symbols in X. Hence S_1O can be distinguished from S_2O by

$$\Sigma(S_2 0) - \Sigma(S_1 0) = S0$$

$$\Sigma(S_10) - \Sigma(S_20) = 0$$

and from S30 by

$$\Sigma(S_30) - \Sigma(S_10) = SS0$$

$$\Sigma(S_30) - \Sigma(S_30) = 0$$

We can now define $L^1(X)$ and $H^1(X)$ the lowest(suffix) and highest (suffix) of successor symbols of X, by

$$L^{1}(0) = 0$$

$$L^{1}(S_{u}X) = L^{1}(X) \cdot (1 - (\Sigma(L^{1}(X)) - \Sigma(S_{u}^{0}))) +$$

$$S_{u}^{0} \cdot (1 - (1 - (\Sigma(L^{1}(X)) - \Sigma(S_{u}^{0})))) \quad u=1,...,n,$$

and

$$H^{1}(0) = 0$$

$$H^{1}(S_{u}X) = H^{1}(X) \cdot (1 - (\Sigma(S_{u}0) - \Sigma(H^{1}(X)))) +$$

$$S_{u}0 \cdot (1 - (1 - (\Sigma(S_{u}0) - \Sigma(H^{1}(X))))) \quad u=1,...,n.$$

That is $L^1(X)$ is defined by

$$L^1(0) = 0$$

$$\begin{array}{lll} \mathtt{L^1(S_u^X)} = \left\{ \mathtt{L^1(X)} & \text{if the suffix of} & \mathtt{S_u^0} \geqslant \text{the suffix of} & \mathtt{L^1(X)} \\ \left\{ \mathtt{S_u^0} & \text{if the suffix of} & \mathtt{S_u^0} < \text{the suffix of} & \mathtt{L^1(X)} \end{array} \right. \\ \end{array}$$

and H1(X) is defined by

$$H^1(0) = 0$$

$$H^{1}(S_{u}X) = \begin{cases} H^{1}(X) & \text{if the suffix of} \quad S_{u}0 \leqslant \text{ the suffix of} \quad H^{1}(X) \\ S_{u}0 & \text{if the suffix of} \quad S_{u}0 > \text{ the suffix of} \quad H^{1}(X) \end{cases}$$

Thus $\Sigma(L^1(X))$ gives the suffix of the lowest successor symbol and $\Sigma(H^1(X))$ gives the suffix of the highest successor symbol.

Now $L^{2}(X)$, the second lowest successor symbol, is obviously given by

$$L^{2}(X) = L^{1}(X - L^{1}(X) \cdot \phi(X))$$

that is

$$X - L^1(X) \cdot \phi(X)$$

gives X without any of its lowest successor symbols, and therefore the lowest successor symbol of this is the second lowest successor symbol of X. Hence $L^3(X)$ is given by

$$L^{3}(X) = L^{2}(X - L^{1}(X) \cdot \phi(X))$$

etc. ...

The highest successor symbol is therefore given by

$$H^{1}(X) = \{L^{1}(X) & \text{if } \phi(X) = 1 \\ \{L^{\phi(\psi(X))}(X) & \text{otherwise} \}$$

Similarly we have

$$H^{2}(X) = H^{1}(X - H^{1}(X) \cdot \phi(X))$$

and

$$L^{1}(X) = \{H^{1}(X) & \text{if } \phi(X) = 1 \\ \{H^{\phi}(\psi(X))_{(X)} & \text{otherwise} \}$$

Thus

$$\Sigma(L^1(X)), \Sigma(L^2(X)), \ldots, \Sigma(L^{\phi(\psi(X))}(X))$$

and

$$\Sigma(H^1(X)),\Sigma(H^2(X)),\ldots,\Sigma(H^{\phi(\psi(X))}(X))$$

enumerate the suffixes of all the different successor symbols in X, the first series from lowest to highest and the second series from highest to lowest.

(iv) How many are there of each different successor symbol?

We could answer this question by

$$\phi(C_k X)$$
 = the number of 'S_k' successor symbols in X

though we count the particular successor symbols that are in X by the use of the function defined by

$$\phi (X : (1 : L^k(X))^x \phi(X))$$

which gives the number of the 'k'th lowest successor symbols in X. This is obtained by subtracting $\phi(X)$ of all the other successor symbols in X from X and counting the remainder, as there obviously cannot be more than $\phi(X)$ of any successor symbol in X. Similarly we could have

$$\phi(X - (1 - H^{k}(X))^{x}\phi(X))$$

which gives the number of the 'k'th highest successor symbols in X.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- [1] Goodstein, R.L. 'Recursive number theory', North-Holland (1957).
- [2] Kleene, S.C. 'Introduction to Metamathematics', Amsterdam (1952).
- [3] Peter, R.R. 'Recursive Functions', Academic Press (1967).
- [4] Partis, M.T. 'Commutative Multiple Successor Recursive Arithmetics' Ph.D. Thesis, University of Leicester (1964).
- [5] Vučković, V. 'Partially Ordered Recursive Arithmetic',
 Mathematica Scandinavica, Vol.7, 1959, pp.305-320.
- [6] Partis, M.T. 'Commutative Partially Ordered Recursive Arithmetics', Mathematica Scandinavica, Vol.13, 1963, pp.199-216.
- [7] Robinson, R.M. 'Primitive Recursive Functions', Bulletin of the American Math.Soc. Vol.53, 1947, pp.925-942.
- [8] Gladstone, M.D. "A Reduction of the Recursion Scheme', The Journal of Symbolic Logic, Vol.32, No.4, Dec. 1967, pp.505-508.
- [9] Goodstein, R.L. 'Multiple Successor Arithmetics', Formal Systems and Recursive Functions. Proceedings of the eighth logic colloquium, Oxford, July 1963, pp.265-271.